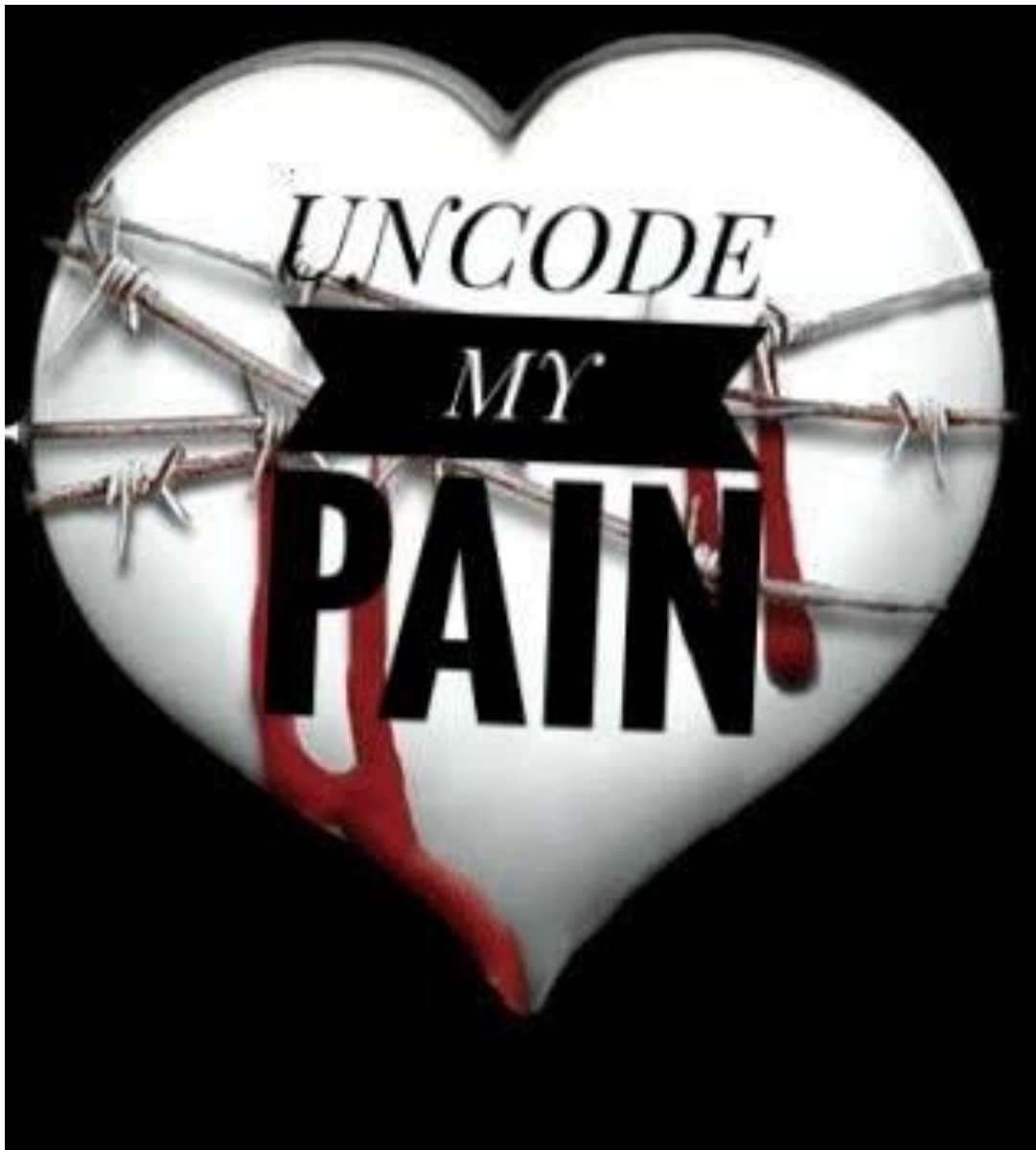


UNCODE MY PAIN



INTRO

I stood behind the tree as the Polo Vivo pulled up next to the gate the weather this Morning was not friendly, it was cold and drizzling a little. The driver's door opened she got out and went to open at the back then took her out, she put her down and took out her Hello kitty backpack. Layla looked so adorable in her outfit she was wearing a blue denim skinny Jean, Pink sneakers and a Pink Jacket. She had a big bun that was neatly tied. She closed the door and locked the car, she then held Layla's hand and they approached the gate other kids were also just arriving at the Preschool..

Fufu- Pssss!! Pssss!! Snowy!

I turned back and looked at her she indicated to me with her hand that time was running out, I turned and looked at the Polo one more time before running off to my friend Fufu. How do I even begin to Uncode for you what is encrypted and buried deep inside the slums of my heart? With every heartbeat my Pain and sorrows remain coded as the only way for me to survive. I am not a Person of many words I find it very difficult to open up and talk about certain things that disturb my soul, where my voice was silenced my heart coded my Pain and turned it into Anger. That is how I survive everyday by turning my Pain into anger so I can hurt someone first before they hurt me. Figuratively I killed all my human feelings so that my physical being could withstand my emotional pain without me having to hurt myself or feel suicidal, I can stand firm and say Nothing moves me anymore except for my Daughter Layla she's the only thing that reminds me of being a human being. Layla is currently in the care of my Little sister Melokuhle, I have no doubt that she sees Okuhle as her Mother now instead of her Aunty.

I left my Daughter at the doorstep of my house while she was just a few days old I knew that my family would take better care of her than I would've, she deserved and still deserves the best I wanted her to grow up like a normal kid one happy Kid without having to be raised by a damaged Mother. She is turning 5 years old today she is very cute and adorable funny enough she looks exactly just like me, I have had a lot of Abortions in the past few years why I decided to keep Layla is something that I cannot explain. You might be reading this and fail to understand why I am not in my Daughter's life, you might find fault in what I did you might never know why I chose to be a distant Mother, life sometimes can turn on you in ways that you never imagined.

Everyday for the past 3 years I stood behind that tree and watched my Daughter being delivered at the daycare she was just 2 years old back then and now that she is 5 years old I still watch her being dropped off at Preschool that's how I have witnessed her grow. I make sure that I never miss this opportunity everyday at 7am hot, cold, or raining I am here then as soon as they make their way inside I leave..

Me- Happy birthday Layla

...

I am Minentle "Snowy" Nene I am here to uncode my Pain for you

Part 01

SNOWY

My Father left us when I was still in diapers My Mother never really went into the Depths of his departure she has always brushed it off but my Grandmother would throw a bit of hints here and there when she was scolding us. I am not the only child before Okuhle was born it was me and my big Brother unfortunately he passed on a few years ago, his death is another cause of my pain. I had problems accepting that he was gone seeing that he was my Protector at some point, I grew up with him as a male figure that protected me. He took up my Father's responsibility.

Taking you back to my childhood there aren't happy memories that live there hence I don't dwell on my upbringing that much let alone even talk about it, it's something that I had encrypted and coded so that no one would ever be able to uncode it but myself. A few years later after my Father walked out on us we were forced to move back to my Grandmother's house since my Mom wasn't able to fully take care of us, she resorted to my Grandmother for help and let me tell you life was difficult for us there. My Grandmother is that type of Person who would complain first before doing something for you, she will still complain even after doing that thing for you so that forced my Mother to get piece jobs just so we can make ends meet and not be a total burden to my Grandmother. The jobs she used to do weren't that much interesting it was your typical maid jobs, a week she used to attend two houses and her pay wasn't impressive either...

Halfway through our struggles Mom met this wonderful man by the name of Buda, he was not rich but very financial stable I remember the toys he bought me when he first met me. The groceries he dropped off and the money that he gave my Grandmother, he was truly a God sent we believed that he was going to be Mom's knight in shining Armour and he was, I mean how many Men would accept a woman with two kids? Let alone evening love those kids like they were his? Not a lot of them..

Approximately after a year of their relationship he asked us to move in with him in his 6 room house that was situated in a suburban and quiet neighborhood, unfortunately my Brother didn't move in with us because by then he had started smoking weed and hanging around with bad company Mom didn't want him to ruin things for her so he stayed behind with my Grandmother. Life in my new home was a bliss though Buda was just my Step Father but he treated me as if like I was his own, he really loved and worshiped me there's nothing that he refused to do for me. Even today I'm still puzzled at what he was doing for a living because I never saw him waking up every morning and prepared himself for work, he was always indoors but money would always come in. Later on we welcomed another addition to our Family my Little Sister Melokuhle, I was so happy when Mom came back from the hospital with her. Looking at her tiny fingers and how small she was I instantly fell in love with her, she was very fascinating I used to enjoy seeing her sucking her bottle or being breastfed while she made those cute sounds. It was always a priceless moment witnessing that. When Okuhle was exactly 5 months old Buda found my Mother a better job and she was doing an 08:00am-17:00 shift on weekdays, I never really understood why she had to work while Buda had so much money until one morning when all was made clear to me. That morning I walked into Buda doing something sickening to my baby Sister by then I didn't know that it was wrong because I was still young but thinking of it now it makes me sick to my stomach, I walked in on him rubbing my Sister's small clitoris he had just finished bathing her. I remember I stood there and looked at him, he was all relaxed didn't even freak out a little that I saw him doing that instead he smiled at me and said "Do you want to feel it too?". I looked at Melokuhle and she was sucking her thumb with her not crying I knew that it wasn't

something that's painful so I nodded, he picked me up and placed me on the bed and lowered my underwear it was still very early in the morning so I was in my night dress. He licked his thumb and started playing with my clit I was 5 or 6 back then and I couldn't feel anything when he was doing that all I remember was holding my baby Sister's little hand as he did that to us every morning. Every morning when my Mom left for work he would do that to us and then reward us with a lot of treats just so I keep our little secret..

That went on for a year before things progressed one time he lowered his boxers exposing his manhood and he rubbed himself just at the entrance of Okuhle's cookie, He didn't put it in he just rubbed himself and with Okuhle not crying he was kind of like assuring me that it's not painful and that I shouldn't be scared.

He did that despicable act on me until one day he slowly pressed it in and it was the most painful thing I have ever felt, I told him that it was painful but his calm self would relax me by softly speaking to me that soon it will get better and it didn't, each time it was horrible. As much as I wanted to tell my Mother I couldn't because he has promised that if I talk he is going to do it to Okuhle and with the pain I felt I really didn't want Okuhle to go through that, so I took it all in for her. Things got really bad for me I couldn't hold my urine anymore on several occasions I would wet my bed my Mom would always beat me, at school I was a bully I just developed a different attitude instantly that my Mother didn't know what to do with me anymore but Buda was always there to stand up for me. When my Mom saw that my bed wetting was now a problem she wanted to take me to the Dr but Buda offered to take me, we never really went to the Dr and when we came back he told my Mother lies..

The sexual abuse went on up until I was around 12 years old by then Okuhle was 7 years old and now she was old enough to know what was happening so Buda would make her watch cartoons a lot in the morning while we do the deed and then after he would drive us to school. By then my Body had changed, My breasts were a little big bigger and Buda enjoyed massaging them and sucking them, I was more wider on my hips and I had thick thighs which made him to enjoy me more than he did with my Mom and that affected their relationship because my Mother didn't know what was going on. She did somehow suspect that he was cheating she never noticed that he was sexually abusing me. By the time that I was 13 I had fallen pregnant we only found out when I started feeling somehow and Buda took me to the Dr, and then he exposed me to Another world. The world of Abortion at the age of 13. The abuse only stopped when my Brother came to visit and he accidentally walked in on me naked in the bathroom, somehow his eyes landed on my cookie and he was disturbed at how it was for a 13 year old. At first he thought that I was sleeping around but as he searched deeper I ended up telling him what was happening and he blew up. He started a fight with Buda a physical fight and Buda stabbed him to death right in front of me, My Brother died defending me. When my Mother and My Grandmother learned about what happened, when I had finally opened up to them I thought they would understand and be supportive but who was I kidding? My Grandmother called me a liar and told me that my plan from the word go was to destroy my Mother's relationship with Buda. She would use emotional blackmail that Buda took us in when my Father walked out on us and took care of us and that this is the thanks that I am giving him, by lying and getting my Brother killed for nothing. It was a mess I won't lie, A serious mess. Buda ended up getting arrested for my Brother's murder my testimony was the one that placed him behind bars, that made my Grandmother to hate me even more that things at home weren't peaceful anymore. My Mother would go weeks without talking to me, she would act like I didn't exist her hurt of losing the only man that she possibly loved after my Father she put it on me. I was accused to have taken her happiness away from her..

Right when I was 16 years old I couldn't take it anymore I ran away from home to live with some old guy who was my boyfriend, by now older guys would be hitting on me because of my body they would think that I'm older and to me it felt normal because Buda was old and used to sleep with me so sleeping with these old men wasn't a problem for me. I was broken and somehow sex became a normal thing to me giving myself to guys in that way felt normal, it felt like I was meant to do that and I didn't care because I had lost myself long time ago. It got so bad that I would

even do sex tapes and People would bash on me on how trashy my cookie looked but I didn't care, I didn't care what people thought. I lived that life in Johannesburg Just sleeping with men and having them do nice things for me, buy me clothes, expensive wine/champagne just take good care of me. Now I wouldn't call that prostitution I called it beneficial dating. As much as I was violated as a child but I would still fall pregnant which was weird because I thought my womb was going to be affected in what happened but I could still fall pregnant and I would abort each time that I fell pregnant. By the time that I was 18 I met this other girl she was originally from Zimbabwe she came to SA in hopes to find a job but life doesn't go according to plan sometimes so she ended up joining me and together we ran the streets of Jhb, we got ourselves a flat and life moved on. We became the best of friends her name is Jackie but I call her Fufu.. Life in the streets wasn't always glamorous some of these Men would kidnap me and lock me up in their houses, forcing themselves on me everyday some of them would physically abuse me I don't even know how I am still alive, I really thought that I wouldn't make it to the age of 21 and here I am today I am 26. For me to live like a normal person I had to take that part of my pain and encrypt it then buried it deep inside of me to never surface again, I used that Pain to make me inhuman that I ended up fighting back when men started to beat me. I have stabbed a few of them, poured hot water on some, I have fought with a lot of bitches from the streets I really turned out to be a very cold hearted person and even today love and being in a serious relationship is something that I will never do. I would never fall in love, I can never eat love money talks first.. That is the whole story of why I am like this today, nothing much has changed I am still about my life and it works for me I get a lot of money to take care of myself and always look good.. That's enough for me

Part 02

SNOWY

I thought that the weather would've changed by now but it was still cloudy, drizzling, and cold. Fufu and I we were sitting at our usual spot were we run our car wash that makes us reasonable money especially month end. It is not your typical car wash we go beyond washing cars to satisfying our clients sexually at times hence why they always here for our services, both their car being washed and their sexual needs being taken care of. I know it sounds weird but I am very comfortable with how things are as far as dating is concerned, ever since Layla's father played me I made a promise to myself that I will never be in a serious relationship ever again. He was married and seeing me on the side I was naive back then and I really believed him when he said he was going to leave his wife, since they were having "Problems" but as soon as I told him that I'm pregnant he made a run for it. I wanted to abort but I couldn't, I don't know why I never had the courage to abort her whilst I had tons of abortions before. I looked up as I felt the wetness coming into contact with my face this day reminds me of when I left Layla at the door step of my house, the weather was exactly like this. I left her there and walked away without even looking back I was not even moved by the fact that rain was going to make her sick because the security door was locked that day I think no one was home. I left my Daughter there and never looked back..

I felt someone shaking me..

Fufu: Why you standing there while it's drizzling? come seek shelter here and you even getting wet

I moved to where she was standing..

Her: Why are we here again? I mean it's raining we won't have cars coming in

Me: We might score a customer that would wanna you know

She rolled her eyes..

Me: You roll your eyes but it pays the bills

She took out a joint and a lighter..

Me: When did you roll?

Her: I rolled last night.. I rolled three and we smoked two this is our third

She lit it up..

Her: Can I ask you something?

Me: Shoot

Her: Do you think that at some point we will live like normal people?

Me: What do you mean by "Normal people"

Her: Fall inlove, get good jobs, get married and have kids?

I chuckled..

Me: You like to dream the impossible

Her: You really wanna live like this all your life?

Me: It's working for us isn't it?

She passed me the joint..

Me: I told you stop stressing about shit like that.. That life is not for us

Her: Oh Oh Oh.. You might wanna drop the joint

Me: Why?

Her: Khayone

I checked and I saw his ford figo making it's way to us, I gave Fufu the joint..

Me: What the hell does he want?

Her: You know that guy loves you

Khayone used to bring his car around and as always we would sleep together until he caught feelings and started treating me like his girlfriend. He is very sweet, he works at Capitec and is renting around, he really cares a lot about me but I don't want a relationship with him..

Me: I'm coming

I made my way to his car and got in..

Him: Hey

He tried kissing me but I turned and fixed my seatbelt..

Him: Is that weed I'm smelling?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Him: Snowy

Me: Uyang'rasela (You making noise for me)

He drove away from the car wash, I looked at him and he was wearing a vest. I ran my thumb on the bite mark that was on his shoulder..

Him: It's healing

Me: Why aren't you wearing a short sleeve tshirt? At least one that can cover this part

Him: You know I like vests

Me: It's cold!

Him: So what?

Me: Ohw I see you just wanna show the world that Snowy bit you

Him: Uyaphambana ke ngoku (you are crazy)

I don't know what happened that day, he took me out I got sloshed and when we went back to his place I started an argument with him and then I attacked him physically, he didn't attack me back he just pushed me away from him and walked out. Khayone is very handsome and even younger than me he is 24 years old, he would do well with a normal girl one who will be committed to the relationship and love him. At first when he kept on coming back I thought that maybe it was because of the sex but he doesn't want sex all the time, so I really don't know what he wants. I already made it clear to him several times that we won't work but still.

Him: I will cover it up with a tattoo will that make you feel better?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: Where are we going?

Him: I thought we could get food then go to my place and watch movies on my laptop

Me: With this weather are you sure you don't wanna have sex?

Him: No.. I told you that I like you a lot

I kept quiet and starred out of the window..

(After 5min)

Me: Stop the car

Him: What?

Me: Stop the car I wanna get off

Him: Why?

Me: I don't wanna do movies and all that nonsense

Him: Then we don't have to do movies we can do anything that you want

Me: Khayone stop the car

Him: Sno..

Me: I said stop the car!!! (shouting)

He pulled over and then I got out banging the door..

.

.

TSHEPISO THOBEKGALE

"Been spending most their lives, living in the gangsta's paradise been spending most their lives living in the gangsta's paradise.. Keep spending most our lives living in the gangsta's paradise, Keep spending most our lives living in the gangsta's paradise"

I increased the volume..

Me: Look at the situation they got me facin' I can't live a normal life, I was raised by the streets So I gotta be down with the hood team. Too much television watching got me chasing dreams" I was driving home from the Airport no one knows that I am coming home, not my Father and definitely not my Daughter too. I have been in London for the past two years and life was peaceful there, a different environment and meeting up with different People. I had really started over and even forgot that I was a divorcee I could've continued living there but My Father and my Daughter they both need me close by. I don't want my Daughter growing up in an unstable home where she has to accept every Man that her Mother brings to the house as her "Step Father" I am greatly concerned that someday one of them might sexually violate her she is 16 years old now and very vulnerable to all the vultures out there. My Dad needs me because he is getting old now and can't fully run the family businesses, So I have to help him with that. Help him to continue the Thobekgale legacy for future generations..

Kresi and I didn't have a good marriage but she was a good woman and she deserved better, she didn't deserve all the abuse I put her through I hope she has moved on from that and finally found someone who makes her happy. Someone who will treat her better than I did..

I am 37 years old and at this age I should be married with at least two kids but my bad luck with women has me sitting on the sidewalks, I am not looking for a relationship I just wanna focus on my Daughter and the family businesses that's all. I drove straight to Kresi's workplace I wanted to talk to her about Naledi moving in with me and my Father permanently, I want my Daughter to live with me. I remained in the car for approximately 10min not knowing if I should go in or not, I mean I've hurt this woman so very bad and I don't want her to see me then be reminded of the pain that I put her through. After a long time of being uncertain I got out of the car and made my way in, the receptionist was different. It's no longer her best friend..

Me: Good morning

She looked at me..

Her: Good morning Sir

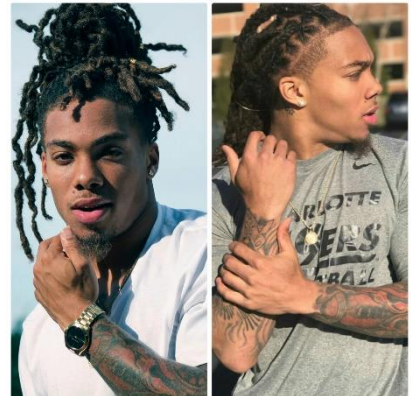
Me: Uhm is Kresi around?

Her: You mean Ms Thobekgale?

Me: Ms Thobekgale? So she kept the surname

Her: Sorry?

Me: Yes Ms Thobekgale
Her: Let me check if she's free
She picked up the phone and dialled her extension..
Her: Ms Thobekgale there's someone here to see you.. Yes.. Okay
She put the phone down..
Her: This way Sir
I followed her..
Me: Do you know who I am?
Her: Uhm No I don't know who you are
Me: Clearly
I looked at her Ass in that short tight skirt, I concentrated on her walk as she was swinging her hips from left to right..
She knocked at the door and I moved my eyes to her face..
Voice: Come in
She opened and we walked in. Kresi was sitting on her chair busy writing on some book..
Receptionist: Uhm Mam' Someone is here to see you
Her: Who is it?
Me: It's me
She moved her eyes from the book and glued them on me..
Receptionist: Can I get you anything to drink?
Me: No thank you I'm fine
She walked out and closed the door..
Me: Hey
She said nothing..
Me: You still look beautiful
She got up from the chair and made her way to me, I got a better view of her..
Me: You look very beautiful
She got really close and looked at me I couldn't tell what she was thinking but she was breathing heavily, out of the blue she slapped me. She slapped me again and again, I let her slap me a few times before holding her hand. She has a small hand so her claps didn't sting that much. I looked at her as tears streamed down her face..
Me: I'm sorry
She tried to get herself from my tight grip but she couldn't..
Me: I'm truly sorry
Her lower lip was trembling, she couldn't hold herself she just broke down. I put my hand at the back of her head and rested her on my chest..
Me: I didn't mean to hurt you



To be continued

Tpee 🍷

Part 03

TSHEPISO THOBEKGALE

She calmed down and then I let her go that part of my tshirt was wet and a bit dirty from her eyeliner, she went back to her chair but didn't sit down. She paged through the book with her hands trembling I looked at the stained part of my tshirt and debated with myself if I should throw it away when I get home or have it washed, will the stain even come off seeing it's a black stain on a white tshirt..

Her: Sorry about your tshirt

Me: It's fine

Her: And about your cheek, it's red

I ran my hand on my cheek..

Her: I guess you have changed the Tpee I know would've sent me flying across the room when I did that

I sighed..

Me: So you kept my surname?

Her: What do you want? And when are you leaving?

Me: I am not leaving anymore

Her: So you back for good

Me: Yes I am

Her: I see

Me: I am actually here to talk to you about Naledi

Her: What about my Daughter?

Me: I would like her to move in with me permanently

She laughed..

Her: That will never happen

Me: Kresi..

Her: You know what you a bastard!!! After two years you just show up out of the blue and demand things

I sat on the armrest of the chair and looked at my tats on my arm..

Me: I know that I have hurt you..

Her: Hurt me? Hurt me is an understatement you have destroyed me!! And I am not talking about the abuse you put me through but I am talking about you as a person

Me: Huh?

Her: You leave a very big gap that cannot be filled you make being with another man seem so useless somehow because they not you! They not like you!

Me: Wo..

Her: And I don't mean that as a compliment!! You don't give any care about the damage you cause to other People after this you going to move on and get another woman what about me?

Me: Honestly speaking Kresi I am not here for that..I don't wanna go there I am strictly here to talk to you about Poonkie Pie

Her: Get out!!!!

I looked at her..

Her: I said get out!!!!

I got up and walked to the door but I didn't open it, I turned around and looked at her..

Me: Kresi

Her: Tshepi I said G..

Me: Eyy!!!

She kept quiet..

Me: I have been trying to be very patient with you but now you going to piss me off with all this shouting and shit!!

She still remained quiet..

Me: I might have been a horrible husband to you but my Daughter is the best thing that ever happened to my marriage, she is the breathing proof that at least there's some good that happened in my marriage! She's the most important reason on why I decided to come back I didn't come back for you I came back for my Daughter are we clear?

She gave me that look that she always gave me when I instill fear in her..

Me: Dammit Kresi I don't wanna do this with you! You the Mother of my child and I want to respect you but you making it difficult because this attitude is the reason why we divorced you can be very impossible sometimes!

Her phone rang, she picked it up..

Her: Hello?.. Yes this is she.. Okay I am on my way.. Yes thank you

She put the phone down..

Her: That was Naledi's school.. I have to go and fetch her

Me: What's wrong?

Her: Her cramps are really bad every month when she goes to her periods especially the first day

Me: I'll fetch her

We heard a knock at the door..

Kresi: Come in

The door opened and Some guy walked in..

Him: There was no one at the reception

He was holding flowers..

I looked at Kresi and she didn't know what to say..

Me: I'll definitely fetch my Daughter

I walked up to the door bumping into the guy on purpose he prevented himself from falling by taking a few steps back dropping the flowers..

Him: And then?

I stopped and looked at him..

Him: O bua sengwe (are you saying something)

Kresi: Tshepi please don't

I indicated to her with my hand that she must hold up

He chuckled and bent down to pick the flowers..

Him: Naa ak'na stress

I stepped on the flowers on purpose and then walked to open the door..

.

.

SNOWY

I walked to Layla's preschool, I waited by the tree as always. I am usually here in the mornings never in the afternoon to see her being picked up today was the first. When I saw the Polo Vivo pulling up I quickly hid behind the tree, Okuhle came out and went in the yard..

Me: Come on Snowy you can do this

I moved from behind the tree and thought of approaching her car but I couldn't, I stood there all frozen. They both came out after a few minutes Layla was busy jumping around looked like she was talking and Okuhle was laughing, She opened at the back and put her in..

Me: Snowy come on

I moved again from behind the tree and made my way to her car..

Me: Ok.. Okuhle!!!

She closed the door and looked around until she spotted me, I felt my whole body being paralyzed by fear something that usually doesn't happen to me anymore. I dragged my feet and went to her, she was really shocked to see me..

Her: Snowy
I was literally shaking..

Me: Hey
I haven't seen Okuhle in a very long time and worse we lost contact..
I saw tears building up in her eyes..

Her: I can't believe this
She came closer and hugged me she was shaking too.

Her: Ohh my word look at God.. I thought I would never see you again
We broke the hug and she wiped her tears..

Her: I am even shaking

Me: So am I
I turned and looked at the car, I looked at her through the window and my heart somehow melted. She looked very cute..

Okuhle: Do you wanna say hi?

Me: I.. I don't think so

Okuhle: Come on just say hi
She placed her hand on the door handle..

Me: I said no!!! (shouting)
She let go..

Me: I'm sorry I think it's.. I just..
She held my hand..

Her: It's okay maybe you can meet her some other time

Me: Maybe
She took out her phone..

Her: Can you please give me your numbers
I put in my numbers..

Her: I'll call you

Me: Yes do

Her: Hold on
She opened the car on her side and took out her wallet, she opened it and took out a few R100 notes..

Her: Here

Me: What is this?

Her: Something to get you by

Me: I don't need your Money Okuhle I am not struggling

Her: Of course I am truly sorry
Layla started banging on the window..

Okuhle: I have to go

Me: It was nice seeing you
She hugged me..

Her: I love you

Me: Me too
She broke the hug and got in the car then I watched them as the car slowly drove off and disappeared...

I turned around with a smile on my face and walked away, Though I didn't get to hold her nor see her face to face but seeing her that much upclose was very breathtaking..

As I was about to cross the road a certain car came, it was speeding I stepped back. It stopped right in front of me and then some guy who was sitting at the passenger's seat came out. He came to me and grabbed my arm in a very rough manner..

Him: Get in and don't make a scene
I didn't know who he was, I have never seen him before..

Part 04

SNOWY

The car drove straight to a town called Springs I don't think this guys wanted to hurt me I mean they didn't even hold a gun at me or threaten me anyhow, I know I done did a lot of shit but I don't recognize them. I have never had an encounter with them. I was trying so hard to remember them from somewhere but nothing, I didn't know them at all..

The car parked next to what looked like a Chinese or Pakistan clothing store, the guy still grabbed my arm in a very rough way I don't know why because I wasn't planning on running away..

We got inside and Caiphus the bulldog was at the counter, I should've known. He was wearing his blue&white basket ball shirt, had his gold chain around his neck that matched his bracelet and gold ring. He was standing there busy counting coins..

Me: Caiphus?

The two guys who drove me here went and sat by the door..

Caiphus: R50.. R55.. R60.. R65

I know Caiphus through Fufu somehow Fufu got involved in some drug dealings and she owes Caiphus a lot of money, she has been hiding from him. Caiphus is not his real name, he named himself that because People found it a bit difficult to pronounce his name, he is originally from Ghana..

Him: R100..

He raised his head and looked at me..

Me: When did you move from your flat in Jhb to here?

Him: This is not a social call.. I didn't have you brought here for coca cola and a banana cake

Me: Not that I would refuse that

Him: Where is Fufu?

Me: I don't know

Him: Where is Fufu with my money?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Him: She owes me R15 000

Me: How is it any of my problem? I am not the one who ran away with your money and drugs

Him: Snowy If I have you that means you can lead me straight to Fufu you two are always together

Me: Caiphus I don't know where Fufu is

(Silence)

Him: I must say the lady with the Polo she is pretty

Me: What?

Him: And her child too.. Little adorable girl

Me: Have you been following me Caiphus?

Him: Following you? Snowy you stand by the tree every morning watching that woman with her daughter that's how I found you.. Maybe they will know where Fufu is

Me: Leave them out of this

Him: I would if I find Fufu

I looked at his two hooligans then I looked at him..

Me: I'll find Fufu for you

Him: Now we in business

Me: Just stay away from the girl

Him: Find me Fufu I give you a week

Me: Can they drive me back now?

Him: What am I? Your public transportation? Walk!

The two guys laughed.. I walked away from the counter and made my way out, I took my phone out and called Fufu..

Fufu: How is the date going Snowy?

I checked if I wasn't being followed..

Me: When are you planning on paying Caiphus?

Fufu: I told you we dodged the bullet

Me: Did we?

Fufu: What is happening?

Me: Pay him back his money Fufu

Fufu: Did you bump into him? Oh my word are you with him? Is he listening to this conversation?

What's happening Snowy are you selling me out?

Me: Pay him back or else you will have me to deal with!!

I didn't wait for her to respond I hung up..

I didn't have money on me so I had no choice but to call Khayone..

Him: Snowy

Me: Hey hope I am not interrupting

He kept quiet..

Me: Khayone?

Him: Can I help you with something?

I didn't expect him to be like this..

Me: Look I'm stranded somewhere can you please come and pick me up?

Him: Why would I do that?

Me: Khayone please

He hung up..

Me: Kh..

I lowered my phone..

Me: Dammit!!!

.
.

TSHEPISO THOBEKGALE

I got to Naledi's school and enquired at the office they called her class and her teacher referred me to the Nurse's office, I was accompanied there by one of the guards..

Me: Thank you

The guard left me at the door..

I knocked..

Voice: Come in

I opened and walked in, The Nurse was sitting at her table..

Me: Good day

She looked at me..

Her: Good day

Me: I believe my Daughter is here.. Naledi Thobekgale?

Her: Let me see

She checked on her laptop..

Her: Naledi Thobekgale.... Na.. Ohw yes she is here

Me: I am here to get her I am her Father

Her: Hold on a sec let me go and get her for you

She stood up and disappeared in the small passage.

I waited there while running my eyes around, this school prides itself in everything. This looks like a clinic.. I waited for almost 2min and they both showed up from the passage, the Nurse was holding her backpack..

Her: Daddy?
Her eyes widened..
Me: Poonkie pie
She made her way to me and hugged me tightly..
Me: Hey are you okay?
She held on to me for dear life..
Me: Baby are you okay?
Her: I'm happy to see you
Her voice breaking gave her away that she was crying.
Me: I am happy to see you too
The Nurse was standing there with a smile on her face
admiring the moment..
I broke the hug..
Me: How are you feeling?
Her: Why didn't you tell me that you were coming?
I wiped her tears..
Me: Then it wouldn't be a surprise
Her: How long are you staying?
Me: I'm back for good
Her: Are you serious? (Crying)
Me: Yes
She hugged me again all crying..
Nurse: You guys are about to make me cry too
Naledi: Please don't leave me
Me: I won't.. I will never leave you again I promise

.

SNOWY

I have been walking around not knowing where I was going, I didn't have a plan or anyone else to call. I looked at the time and it was now 13:00, I looked around and this place was very busy.. I can't call Fufu to come and get me this might be a trap, Caiphus or his goons might be watching me right now..
I continued walking trying to think of something I looked around and everyone seemed to know where they were going. My eyes landed on some woman she had a lot of plastics with her and her bag was falling off from her shoulder, I approached her..
Me: Sanibonani? (Greetings)
She looked at me..
Her: Sawubona ntombazana (greetings to you too)
Me: Nginganiphathisa? (Can I help you with that)
She looked at me and I smiled, I have this innocent face that people always buy..
Her: Ngingabonga kakhulu (I would be grateful)
I helped her with a few plastics..
I checked them out and there wasn't anything interesting just groceries..
Me: Nilibhekise kuphi? (Where are you going)
Her: Taxi rank kodwa ngifuna ukudlula la e chemist (I am going to the taxi rank but I wanna pass by at the chemist)
Me: Okay
We walked to the pharmacy busy talking and laughing she asked me where I am from you know just those typical questions..
We got to the pharmacy and we walked in..
Me: Ungahlala phansi mina ngizoyokuthengela (You can sit down and I'll go buy for you)
Her: Ave ulungile (You are very kind)
She sat down and I put the plastics next to her, she took out her wallet. She got R50 from there..

Her: ngicela ungithengele I.. Ima kancane ithi ngikunike I R100 (Wait a minute let me give you R100)

She took out R100 and gave it to me, I was now holding R150..

Her: Uzongithengela i.. (You will buy for me...)

She bent down put her purse in her bag that's when I quickly walked out of the pharmacy and then when I was outside I made a run for it..

Part 05

SNOWY

I really didn't know what Fufu and I were going to do with this 15k that we supposed to miraculously come up with in a week's time. I was pacing up and down in our flat while she sat on the couch also thinking of a way, the taxis from springs to jhb cbd filled up quicker than I could say my name. Someone would say why don't I just give up Fufu but I can't, she has been the only family and friend that I have since I started living on the streets. We met each other at our lowest and we have always been there for each other, unlike me she is very timid and scares easily. I don't know how she survived in the streets for this long..

Her: How did he even find us?

Me: I don't know and that's not important right now

Her: Caiphus is going to find me an kill me

Me: We won't let that happen

Her: Then what's the plan?

Me: I don't know I'm still thinking!!!! (shouting)

A few seconds passed without us saying anything to each other..

Me: We have been here before and we have always managed to find a way out

Her: You have always came with a way out between the two of us you are the smart one Snowy, you have always been street smart and a fast thinker

She is right I have always known how to get us out of situations no matter how tough the situation was but now I am totally clueless, all I know is that 15k has to come through somehow before Caiphus goes after Layla and Okuhle...

Her: Are we going have to sell ourselves?

Me: No Fufu we not prostitutes

Her: What are we doing at the car wash then?

Me: That's beneficial dating I told you

I sat on the couch..

Her: Let me just hand myself to him

Me: Are you insane? He is going to kill you!

Her: What choice do I have?

Me: Just leave it to me okay? I'll think of something

.

.

TSHEPISO

Naledi was clingy she was at the back and hugging my chair, her soft hands extended to my neck..

Me: How are you feeling now?

Her: I will be okay

(Silence)

Her: Daddy where are you staying?

Me: Since I sold my house I'll be staying with Grandpa Vic until I get my own place

Her: Can I stay with you and Grandpa?

Me: Your Mom is giving me a headache with that I think you will have to visit me on weekends

Her: But I don't wanna stay with Mom anymore

Me: Why?

She kept quiet..

Me: Poonkie Pie why don't you wanna stay with Mommy anymore?

She started crying..

Her: Mom's boyfriend is mean to me

I pulled over..

Me: What?

Her: He doesn't like me.. He says I'm too spoiled, he hits me.. Last week he hit me and I fell I even hurt my knee that's why I'm limping

I couldn't believe what I was hearing..

Me: What did Mommy say?

Her: She doesn't know because when Mom is around he acts nice

I was boiling at this point hearing my Daughter crying like this even getting hiccups because some piece of shit who clearly hasn't heard of me is putting his hands on her, worse Kresi doesn't notice. What kind of a Mother doesn't notice when her daughter is being abused?

I swallowed hard before asking this question..

Me: Has he ever touched you in a very inappropriate way?

Her: No

Me: Baby if he has touched you or forced himself on you, you have to tell me

Her: He only beats me

A part of me just broke I was up in London while my Daughter was being abused..

Me: For how long has he been doing this to you?

Her: It's been a while

My whole system shut down, my hands trembled on the wheel. I was consumed by soo much anger that I wasn't aware of what was happening at that point, I only got in touch with reality after a while. I started the car again and then drove off..

(After 5min)

Naledi: Daddy where are we going? That's not the way to Grandpa's place

Me: We going to Mom's place.. Daddy has to talk to Mom's boyfriend

Her: Daddy please no

Me: Naledi

Her: If you hurt him you going to go to jail and then he is going to beat me more

I kept quiet..

Her: Daddy please!!!! (Crying)

Me: Okay we won't go to Mom's place.. We going to Grandpa's place okay?

Her: Okay

I felt like I failed my Daughter.. As a Father I'm supposed to protect her at all times..

.

.

SNOWY

I looked at Fufu as she was all passed out on the couch I thought about Caiphus and all the things he would do to my Daughter, I was immediately drawn to what happened to me when I was a child. All the sexual abuse I endured, and it damaged me. I have failed Layla as a Mother I cannot fail her again and most importantly I cannot imagine a man putting her through what I went through. I didn't realize how deep I was lost in my thoughts until I dropped the glass that I was holding, the shattering sound woke Fufu up..

Me: Sorry it's just a glass

She sat up straight..

Her: Did you think of a way?

Me: No

Her: So we doomed?

Me: I don't Fufu I really don't know

I got up to get the dustpan..

.

TSHEPISO

When we got home Naledi changed her school uniform she had a few clothes in her wardrobe that she always leaves behind when she comes to visit here. My Daughter has always been a happy child, she has always been bubbly and just her crazy self but today she was different. She was scared, the sound of the door banging would freak her out she was Paranoid and no longer the Naledi that I know.

I watched her Sleep, she would open her eyes after a few seconds just to make sure that I was still sitting on the chair. Her phone vibrated she didn't wake up, I guess she hasn't had a peaceful sleep in a long time.

I took it and it was Kresi, I clenched my teeth..

Me: O nyaka eng? (What do you want)

Her: Ehhhh where is Poonkie Pie?

I didn't say a word..

Her: Tshepi

I stood up and walked out of her bedroom..

Me: Leme communicate something to you, Naledi is never coming there! Don't fucken call her, don't even show up here or else I'm going to kill you do you get what I'm saying?

Her: What the hell?

Me: Do you understand what I'm saying?

Her: I am going straight to the police station and I am going to report you that you kidnapped my Daughter

Me: I'll be waiting while you at it also tell them how your piece of trash of a boyfriend is abusing my Daughter

Her: What are you talking about?

Me: if you weren't soo much of a whore you would've noticed

Her: I am not going to listen to you swearing at me.. Can I talk to my Daughter?

Me: Fuck you Kresi do you hear me? Stay away from my Daughter!! Don't take me back to my Tpee days because you know how cruel I can be

I hung up...

Part 06

SNOWY

I prepared to go to bed all the while I have been looking at my phone waiting for a call or a text from Khayone but nothing. For someone who is always on my back it was very unusual for him to be this quiet.

I must admit that I miss the attention he would give me by chasing after me, I have never had someone care that much for me since my Brother passed on. Khayone would call to just ask what I'm doing, ask if I have eaten, Ask if he should get me something to eat or anything one time he brought me sanitary pads when I was on my periods and didn't have any around the house. Sex with him is not just fucking me and then giving me money and leave to attend to his wife and kids, He would stay overnight and leave in the morning after we had breakfast or even take me out for breakfast. I have never met anyone so warm hearted like him and it scares me because I have never had such, no one has ever given fucks about me.

I sat on my bed with a towel wrapped around my naked body and I called him, I don't know why I was calling him but I felt like calling him. My heart beat increased when I heard the phone ring if

he picks up I don't know what I'm going to say to him..

Voice: Khayone's phone Hello?

It was a female voice..

Me:.....

Voice: Are you there?

I wanted to say something but my throat raised no words..

Voice: Hello???

I heard Khayone speaking in the background..

Him: Who is it?

Voice: I don't know the person is not saying anything

Him: Let me see

I hung up..

I know that I wanted Khayone to find a girl that's better than me a girl that would love him and be happy to be in a relationship with him and now that I am witnessing this, it's no longer fun as how I had imagined it. Some how I was heartbroken a little and I shouldn't be because I have always treated him like shit. I looked at my phone again hoping he would call me back but he didn't, so he probably no longer cares.

.

.

TSHEPISO

My Father wasn't around he was overseas handling some business so he just came home a few minutes ago and he was also shocked to see me, he was more shocked when I told him that I'm staying. I was shocked too on my side because he walked in with some sexy Ass bitch that I was never told about, apparently they have been going out for a year now. It is not a secret that she stayed with him for the money, I mean she even looks younger than me. I was more shocked but also impressed at the relationship that she has with my Daughter, they just click and act like Sisters. Her name is Siphokazi originally from eastern cape and came here to study, I don't know how she met my Father and he was telling either..

I looked at her and Naledi they were at the kitchen preparing dinner, they were all laughing and talking Naledi seemed to be in a better mood now since Siphokazi showed up. It wouldn't take a rocket scientist to figure out that she is a Slay queen, seems like money and a good life matter more to her..

My Father tapped me a little on my shoulder I turned and looked at him, he indicated that we should go and talk we went upstairs to his study..

Him: I must say that I'm glad you back I can't handle the college and the pharmaceutical alone they are demanding and I'm getting old I shouldn't even be handling businesses anymore but always going on holidays you should be handling everything

Me: I know

Him: Glenfiddich?

Me: Yeah why not?

Him: You seem a bit down keng?

I sat down..

Me: Naledi told me that Kresi's boyfriend is physically abusing her

He almost dropped the bottle of Glenfiddich..

Him: What?

Me: It's messed up I know

Him: When did this happen? Why didn't Kresi tell me?

Me: Kresi is useless! She acted like she didn't know that Naledi was being abused

Him: I told you about that woman, Kresi was a prostitute, she was a whore what did you expect turning a whore into a wife?

Me: This is not the time to point out my past mistakes

Him: She didn't even change the Thobekgale surname after the divorce she still wanna benefit from our Surname

Me: Kresi is testing my patience

Him: We have to deal with this issue accordingly

Me: I know and I am going to handle it

Him: I know your type of handling and No I can't have you arrested you the CEO it would taint our image

Me: I'm trying to protect my Daughter

Him: I know that but let's be rational about this situation

He passed me the glass of whiskey...

Him: If you decide to date again and I am not trying to run your life but please get a normal girl even if she works at a franchise just a decent woman these whores are worthless
I chuckled..

Me: I don't think I will date again

Him: Don't think like that you my only Son you have to carry on the family surname we need an heir I am not discriminating against Naledi but she will get married one day so I need a Grandson our family has to expand

I hear what Vic was saying but I don't think I will do relationships anymore, I have had a lot of them failing

.

.

SNOWY

I woke up the next morning and I think that I might have a plan on how to save Fufu from Caiphus, well I think I have a plan. As usual I stood by the tree when Okuhle was dropping off Layla, I looked around for any suspicious car before crossing and making my way to her car to wait for her. Last night I didn't sleep at all, I kept on tossing and turning busy checking my phone and Khayone had no intentions of calling me or texting me. He really is done with me..
Okuhle came back and I fixed myself..

Her: Snowy?

Me: You said you going to call and you didn't

Her: Yes I was going to call

Me: Okay

Her: Is everything okay?

Me: I need a favour from you... A huge favour

Her: What do you mean?

Me: I am in trouble and I need your help

Her: Well get in the car then we will go out for breakfast and talk

Me: Okay thank you

I got in the car..

.

.

TSHEPISO

Naledi was still feeling cramps but they weren't that severe anyway but I made her miss school anyway because she has to buy a few things since she has moved in with us..

Kresi walked in just as we were about to leave after I made it very clear to her that I don't wanna see her, she was really testing my patience. Naledi felt a bit uneasy seeing her Mom and Kresi looked like she had a lot to say. I gave Naledi the car keys..

Me: Go in the car Baby

She took the keys and walked out with Kresi looking at her..

Me: Didn't I make myself clear?

She looked at me..

Her: I want to know what's going on?

Me: Did you ask your boyfriend?

Her: What did Shadow do? He doesn't even live with us

Me: He is fucken abusing my Daughter and you can't even notice

Her: What?

Me: She's limping Kresi did you see that?

Her: I know that and she told me that she fell at the netball practice

Me: So what Poonkie Pie is lying is that what you saying?

Her: You don't know Naledi Tshepi she is.. She's doing this because since you left she wanted to move to London with you

Me: Are you choosing his side over your own Daughter? What kind of a Mother are you?

Her: I have never left my Daughter in the presence of Shadow I don't even bring him in the house unless Naledi is visiting Vic or friends I go and visit him because I am trying to protect my Daughter, Shadow only yelled at Naledi once when Naledi was disrespecting me in her presence but he has never and I mean never touched Naledi!! Your daughter is no different from you. She is manipulative, and a pathological liar

I don't know why I lost my cool but I found myself slapping her across her face..

She laughed and looked at me..

Her: You know what I wish you could find a woman who is not going to be Kresi, who is not going to be Nissi or any of your Exes that you used to abuse! I wish you could find a woman that's going to be your match one who won't care about your love and your benefits but would leave when you start being like this. I wish you find a woman that you going to love and she plays with your love so you know how it feels one who will take your love for granted, date again and see how your Daughter is going to respond to her. You are not God Tshepiso Thobekgale

She walked to the door but stopped..

Her: Fine she can move in with you as much as it's difficult to let my Daughter go but she was not mine to begin with right? She has always been yours that's the only thing you wanted from me a child? You never really cared about me or our marriage

I didn't say anything..

Her: I am so done with you and you have no idea.. Goodbye Tpee

She opened the door and walked out..

Part 07

SNOWY

We went to KFC I was the one who was going to pay for the breakfast..

Me: I hope I am not making you late for work

Her: No I am not working

Me: How come you have a car but you not working?

Her: Long story

Me: Okuhle I hope you are not dependent on a man or selling yourself

Her: Really Snowy?

Me: I'm sorry that came out wrong

Her: I still live with Mom and Grams, I am currently not even dating

Me: Is everything okay at home?

Her: When has everything ever been okay at home? You know Grams

Me: She still controls Mom?

Her: Everyday

My Grandmother has always controlled my Mother I don't know any decision that my Mother has made without my Grandmother overseeing it, the most evil Person here has always been my Grandmother..

Her: Anyway what can I help you with?

Me: I want you to talk to Mom into meeting up with me I wanna ask her about my Father

Her: Really?

Me: Yes I need to know where he is, he owes me 26 years of maintenance

Her: Why now?

Me: I need to know him...I have a lot to ask him it's time

Her: Well Mom works at the municipality offices she knocks off at 16:00 maybe you can go to her workplace when she knocks off

Me: Ya maybe.. I need to find that man before the week ends

Her: Why? Is everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine

(Silence)

Me: Has she ever asked about me?

Her: Once in a while

I slowly nodded..

Her: Snowy I have to tell you something

Me: What is it?

Her: You will have to take Layla

Me: Why?

Her: Buda is getting released soon

I looked at her trying to register what she was saying..

Her: He is being released for good behaviour and he is going to be back in Mom's life

I couldn't believe what I was hearing..

Her: He is going to come at you for revenge and I'm scared he might hurt Layla

I wasn't ready for this.. I thought my Daughter was safe with my family but clearly I was wrong..

.

.

TSHEPISO

I looked at Naledi as she walked around checking a few clothes and I kept on thinking about what Kresi said. I know that Naledi doesn't like her Mother that much but to go this far as to lying? That doesn't make sense. A part of me wanted to confront her but again if I do this might make her uncomfortable and next time she won't talk when something happens to her..

Me: Poonkie Pie I'm coming.. I'm going to make a phone call

Her: Okay

I walked out and took out my phone, I called one of my closest friends Carl..

Him: Hello?

Me: Eyy Carl

Him: Tpee?

Me: Yeah man it's me

Him: Why are you calling me with an SA number?

Me: I'm back

Him: When did you come back? Why didn't you hit a nigga up we could've organized a little something something for you

Me: Naa man I just wanted to surprise everyone

Him: You damn right we surprised

Me: Listen I need a favour

Him: Why don't I like the sound of that?

Me: It's nothing major

Him: wad up?

Me: Apparently Kresi has a new boyfriend

Him: Shadow?

Me: Yeah something like that.. How do you know him?

Him: I once saw him at her workplace

Me: Naledi is claiming that the nigga has been abusing her

Him: What?

Me: It's a messed up situation

Him: Did you go to the cops?

Me: Since when do we go to the cops? I want you to do a background check on him I wanna know who I'm dealing with

Him: Already did that and listen to me it's best you go through the normal procedure involve cops let it go to court win or lose Naledi will see that you have tried

Me: Carl are you forgetting who you talking too?

Him: Tpee shadow is very dangerous

Me: I don't care

Him: No you don't understand.. He is not your typical Riley that you went against he is very dangerous, trust me you don't wanna go against this one he has been in an out of jail a lot of times and I'm talking about Maximum prison

Me: My Daughter told me that she has been abused I cannot sit and do nothing

Him: Take her to the cops do not go against Shadow he is going to kill you we talking about guy who has been in and of Pollsmoor Prison, the most dangerous prison in SA no make that in Africa if he doesn't kill you he will send you straight to prison and he has a dangerous gang there. He is a part of the most dangerous gang in that prison and you know how it goes you going to be abused you won't survive Pollsmoor Prison, this one just let it go or try to send him back in. For an ex con he might get a harsh sentence that's the only option that you have

Me: Mara Kresi Wantlwaela.. She is bringing a thug close to my Daughter?

Him: I don't think Kresi knows he looks decent apart from his tattoos which I don't think she knows what they mean.. But if you know thugs and you look at him clearly then you will see that he has that thug aura around him

.

.

KRESI

I don't know where I failed Naledi my own Daughter hates me with all her heart and there's nothing I can do about it, for her to pull such a stunt it just shows me that she doesn't want nothing to do with me. Ever since I got back from Tpee's Place I have been on my bed and crying, it hurt. It truly cut deep..

My phone rang I checked who it was and it was Shadow, He has been calling me and I have been ignoring. He sent me a message saying that he is at the door and won't leave until I open, Knowing Shadow and how stubborn he is he won't leave for real

I got out of bed and went to open for him, he was sitting at the doorstep..

Me: For how long have you been sitting there?

He got up..

Him: Long enough

I let him in..

Me: How did you know that I didn't go to work?

Him: I went to your workplace

Me: Ohw

He lifted my chin up so I could look at him..

Him: Wat is fout? (what's wrong)

Me: Nothing

Him: Either you have really bad allergies or you have been crying

I went and stood at the counter while folding my arms..

Me: Naledi told his Father that you abusing her

He chuckled..

Him: What?

I kept quiet..

Him: I don't even come here when she's around

Me: I really don't know why she would hurt me this much

Him: I only yelled at her once when she was disrespecting you

Me: This is too much

I wiped my tears..

Me: I have tried to be a good Mother, I have never hit her, never really yelled at her I always made sure that she knows how much I love her at all times

Him: You definitely not the problem but your ex is

Me: I know that she loves him more than she loves me but I never knew she would go this far

Him: He never respected you and your Daughter saw that, she treats you exactly how her Father used to treat you because she saw it from him. He was supposed to sit her down and talk to her that she should respect you but he allowed her to act like a mini god

I closed my eyes and exhaled..

Him: I love you and I would never mistreat your Daughter hence why I would rather have you visit me than me coming here much because I didn't wanna have an encounter with her, it was going to leave you in an awkward position. I have a daughter myself and I would kill any man that touches her so why would I do that her?

He came and put his hand on my shoulder..

Me: I know and I'm sorry about this

Him: It's fine let her be.. She's a girl and one day she's going to need you

Me: How is your Daughter?

Him: She's fine I was with her yesterday

I nodded..

Him: Is that all that's bothering you?

Me: Yes

Him: Don't lie to me

Me: I'm not lying

Him: Everytime when you quickly change the subject it means there's something you don't wanna tell me, you shifting my focus to something else

I kept quiet..

Him: What's wrong?

Me: He hit me

Him: Wat?

Me: It's fine let's just let it go

Him: Let it go? Ons laat dit nie gaan nie liefie (we not letting it go love)

Me: You don't know how he is like a confrontation will end in a very big fight between you two

Him: He has no right to raise his hand on you! Maybe you saw it right while you were with him but it's not, I have never raised my hand on you and you standing there telling me that it's right for him to do it?

Me: Shadow you don't know him okay? I don't want you getting hurt, Karma will deal with him

Him: I don't work with Karma

Me: I am tired okay? Please let's just let it go I am tired of always dealing with him

He calmed down..

Me: Please..

Him: I will let it go then for you

He pulled me closer to him..

Part 08

SNOWY

What Okuhle told me troubled me a great deal Hearing that Buda will be out soon made my Brother to seem non heroic, Yes he has been locked up for a very long time he did half of his time but that would never bring my Brother back. Buda will be out he is going to get a second

chance at life what about my Brother? He never got a second chance at life..

I highly doubt that my Grandmother is going to agree to give me Layla she has been raised by them and I can't really take them to court, the judge will favour them I will lose the case considering the fact that I am not even working I will be proclaimed unfit to raise her. The streets have raised me, made me strong and fearless but honestly speaking I cannot go up against Buda if he survived being in jail for this long then he can survive anything. I don't know anyone in my life right now who can help eliminate him, all the men I know are very decent when it comes to such and I have no plan but to talk to my Mother..

I took a taxi to my Mom's work I was very nervous I mean I haven't seen her ever since I ran away from home and I don't even know how she is going to react to me, especially since she blamed me for putting Buda behind bars. I have never been there for my Daughter and the best way to make up for that is to give her a safe home away from what I experienced as a child, Just because I failed to raise her doesn't mean I should also fail to protect her. What I went through I would never wish it even on my worst enemy, it's something that damages you and you will never be the same ever again..

I walked in and enquired at some teller who was minding her own business than helping People, she told me that she will get her for me and that I should have a seat. I did as I was told. I felt a lump stuck on my throat, my hands were sweaty and I had tingling sensations under my feet it was a very nerve wrecking situation. After a while I saw her coming through with the lady they spoke for a brief moment and then she pointed at me, My Mother looked at me first from a distance before coming to me. I stood up and wiped my hands on my Jean I could feel my heart beating all the way up to my throat.. She slowly made her way to me she hasn't changed that much only that now she had short hair..

Her: Snowy?

Me: Ma?

We stood and looked at each other not knowing how to respond to each other, it's been years..

Her: The last time I saw you, you were what? 15 or 16?

Me: Somewhere there

Her: I cannot believe this I thought that..

Me: It's me and I am still alive

She was shaking terribly I could see it from her hands, she cleared her throat..

Her: We can go to my office for a cup of tea and talk there

Me: Okay

She led the way and I followed..

.

.

TSHEPISO

After shopping, Naledi and I drove straight to the office and the staff was very happy to see me. Not much has changed my office still looked the same, it was almost as if like I have never left. My Business Partner Austin resigned and moved somewhere else so from hereon It's just going to be me handling everything.

Naledi went to the cafeteria to get some ice cream with the receptionist while I checked a few files and caught up on what happened for the past two years since I've been gone, I have a lot to do and that including finding another Personal assistant in the process. My Father hasn't been running the company very well I don't blame him though he is now getting a bit too old for this much workload, we have lost a few millions and a few clients the hard work of convincing the clients that we have lost to come back to Thobekgale Pharmaceuticals is going to be difficult. I heard a knock at the door as I was sitting there..

Me: Come in

I didn't even check who it was..

I only checked after a few seconds of some awkward silence, It was Shadow...

Me: How did you get in here?

Him: That's why they call me Shadow

His coloured accent was on steroids..

Me: What do you want?

He put both his hands on the chair and looked at me..

Him: I think we know why I'm here

I closed the file..

Me: You have guts showing up in here after what you have done to my daughter

Him: I have never touched your Daughter! I am a father myself to a baby girl I would kill anyone who would put their hand on her!

He said that pointing at me..

Him: Luister hier.. Touch my woman again, ek sal jou dood maak (I will kill you)

I got up from my chair..

Me: I am not fazed by anything

Him: I am not a cheese thug! All I know I learned from inside I didn't use Daddy's money to always bail me out I always did my time!

I looked at his tattoo on his left arm, it was approximately ten drops of blood..

Me: Does Kresi know that each blood drop represents a person that you have killed? Both inside and out?

Him: My relationship is your business because?

Me: She is the Mother of my child therefore she is my business

He started clapping his hands very slowly..

Him: You lost that right the minute you divorced her, Kresi is a good woman you never deserved her

Me: So they told me but I still got her

He moved from where he was standing and then came to me, he got really up close..

Him: Do you know what the 28s do to pretty boys like you inside? We make you dance in the cell and in the showers, you were a pink dress we make you our bitch some even end up committing suicide

I folded my arms and laughed..

Me: You know what I do to bitches like you? I make them scream louder than my daughter when she sees a spider

He laughed too..

Him: Laaitie they don't call me Shadow for nothing

I stepped much closer to him..

Me: And they don't call me Tpee for nothing!

I know now that I have initiated war with Him..

.

.

SNOWY

Her: Here you go

Me: Thank you

She sat down..

Her: How have you been?

I looked at her..

Me: I have been okay

Her: You very beautiful and all grown up... You must be what now? 25 or 26?

Me: 26

Her: Where do you stay? And are you involved with anyone? What are you doing for a living?

Me: Mom I am not here for that.. We cannot just pretend as if like nothing happened

She poured herself tea with her hand still shaking..

Her: Are you here to remind me of what happened or call me a bad Mother?

Me: Neither.. I am here to ask you about my Father

That caught her off guard..

Me: I think it's time now that I meet up with him

Her: Snowy you opening up a can of worms

Me: I just wanna know where my Father is or at least how I can contact him

Her: I don't know

Me: Mom stop tripping!!! You owe me the truth!!! For once just stop messing with me!!!

Her: I don't know where he is okay? We long separated remember? And why now? Why the sudden interest?

(Silence)

Me: Right now you should be thinking about your Daughter when are you planning on seeing her? Snowy she's 5

Me: Ohw yes please let's talk about me being a bad Mother as if like you were a Saint

Her: I think you should leave

I stood up..

Me: Even after all these years and you still the same, you will rot in hell!

I made my way to the door..

Part 09

TSHEPISO

Shadow left after throwing those petty threats at me I don't know who the hell he thinks he is but he should really ask around about me I have always takes care of shit and shitty situations, I have done dealt with a lot of fucks up like him. If he presses too much he might just tune me in the wrong way and find himself dancing to my type of music. I found myself stuck at the office flooded with too much work, I really have no one to go back home too so I am at the right place. Naledi got bored that she even passed out on the couch and I kept on going through a few things, when I was tired I took my phone and I went on Facebook.

The first thing that I stumbled upon where Nissi's pictures with her fiancé Shane Cowen and their Son. Nissi is my step Sister my Father adopted her when she was still young and put her through school, she studied Pharmacy and worked briefly for the family company. I remember when she came to our house as a maid she was young and vulnerable and somehow we ended up hitting it off, even after they adopted her we still continued with our relationship until shit happened and then we separated for good. It hurts to see her happy with someone else they have been together for quite a while now which clearly means that I was the problem I am the reason why we never worked. On the other hand I had a very good woman I married her but I never appreciated her and that forced us to divorce, she has also moved on and I am sure she is happy with her new thug. I don't know why I am like this, I have went to therapy but still it never worked. I laid back on the chair and started thinking a lot, will I ever settle down with a woman? Will I ever find that one woman that I will finally settle down with and grow old with? Those seem like far fetched goals. As much as I try to convince myself that I don't need a woman but deep down I do. I need someone that I can come home too, someone who is going to cook me a delicious home cooked meal, someone who I can travel the world with and someone who is going to give me maybe two more kids. A woman who is done playing around and wanna be hitched, I am getting old and I can't keep on going back and forth I need to settle down..

I took my phone and went to my contacts I stopped scrolling when I landed on Kresi's number, I thought about calling her but I didn't. I put my phone down..

I stood up from the chair and went to the window the view is always beautiful when it's dark, all those lights make everything look beautiful..

.

.

SNOWY

I have never found myself without a plan every situation that comes my I have always managed to tackle it and get myself out. Okuhle's words kept on playing in my mind that Buda is getting

released soon and I don't even know how to get my Daughter out of there. This place won't be a good home for Layla sometimes we have men coming in and walking out as they please, I don't want my Daughter to grow up in such an environment..

Fufu: Here

I took the glass of whiskey from her..

Me: Thank you

Fufu: Okay here is the plan I will sleep with him to wipe off my debt

Me: He will demand sex every time then

Fufu: What else can we do Snowy? We don't have a plan

I gulped down that whiskey..

Me: I don't know Fufu but right now I have bigger problems

Her: What can be bigger than this?

I looked at her..

Me: You won't understand

My phone rang I took it and checked the caller ID, it was a number that I didn't recognize..

Me: Hello?

Voice: Snowy it's me Okuhle

I stood up..

Me: Hey is everything okay?

Her: Everything is fine just wanted to know how the meeting with Mom went

Me: It didn't go well.. She refused to tell me where my Father is

Her: I'm sorry

Me: Don't be it was very expected of her

Her: Look I don't know much but his name is Samson

Me: That won't do justice a name only won't do

Her: I'm sorry I'll try to ask Grams

Me: Thank you

Her: Be well

Me: I will

Her: I love you

Me: I love you too

Fufu: You looking for your Dad?

Me: Something like that

Fufu: for how long will you keep things from me?

Me:...

Fufu: Snowy we have known each other for a very long time now and still you don't wanna tell me nothing about you but I have told you everything about me

Me: Not now Fufu please

Her: Fine..

She got up from the couch..

Her: I'm going to bath and then go to bed

She walked out, I took my glass and went to pour myself whiskey again. My phone rang on the small table again, I went and fetched it with the glass in my hand. The caller ID was a private number..

Me: Hello?

There was no reply..

Me: Hello?

Voice: Snowy

I let go of my glass..

I looked around the flat..

Me: H.. How did you get my number?

I walked to the door and locked it..

Him: Are you serious?

Me: What do you want?
I went and checked the window..
Him: I want to see my Daughter
Me: What Daughter?
Him: Don't piss me off
Me: I don't have a Daughter
Him: Are you trying to test my patience?
Me: I had a daughter with a married man and he took her
He started laughing..
Him: You still wanna do this?
Me: Stay away from me
Him: I want to see my Daughter
He hung up..
I sat down with my heart beating way too fast things have been going from bad to worse now..

.
.

KRESI

Me: Shadow?
There was no response..
Me: Honey what do you wanna eat tonight?
Still no reply..
Me: Shadow??
He walked in after a while busy pressing his phone..
Me: What do you wanna eat?
Him: Surprise me
Me: Okay
I opened the freezer and then checked what kind of meat we had, I got chicken breasts they will be much quicker to prepare. I stood up straight and when I turned around Shadow was standing behind me, I freaked out a little..
Me: You scared me
Him: I'm sorry I didn't mean too
Me: I'll prepare chicken breasts
Him: Why don't we just go out
Me: It's okay I'll cook
He took the tray of chicken and put it on the counter..
Him: You seem a bit exhausted or let me cook
Me: You cook?
Him: I'm a good cook
I chuckled..
Me: I'm sure you are
I tried moving away from him but he pulled me back..
Me: Fine we will go out then
He pulled me closer to him and kissed me..
Me: I thought.. We.. I thought..
Him: Later..
He picked me up and I wrapped my legs around his waist with my arms wrapped around his neck, my butt rested on his strong hands..
We continued kissing while he tried to find his way around and we kept on bumping into things until we fell, I started laughing..
Me: Ouch! You such a cluts
I got ontop of him..
He pulled my weave back a little..
Him: I love you

I smiled..

Me: I love you too

I kissed him..

Part 10

TSHEPISO

Later that evening I went and dropped off Naledi at home she went on with her own things and I felt very bored being in this big and quiet house just watching soccer on my own. Vic and Siphokazi were not around somehow it was their "date night" and they had gone out. The house was very quiet and very boring, not that I am not used to being alone but it gets too much sometimes. I took my phone and called my homie so that we can meet up maybe for a couple of beers and then catch up on what's happening, was kind of hard to get him out of the house.

Gesh is now a family man he spends more time with his fiancé and kids than he does outside so he said on the phone. We come very far he has saved my butt a few times, unlike me he grew up in a hood and the hood made him what he is today I can safely say he has more experience and was in this game for a long time, he practically runs the streets. He proposed that we meet up at some place called "Jozini" It's deep in the hood and always vibing. I admired it a lot when we walked in, you know the Kasi spirit with girls around sharing a 6 pack of hunters dry and dancing with their friends, People eating Pap, chakalaka, and braai meat it really gave this joint a life. It gave it a chilled vibe..

Gesh: I will admit cische ngawa es'tulweni mang'thola i call yakho (I almost fell off the chair when I received your call)

Me: Even surprised ukuthi uNokhanya uk'nike iVisa (Even surprised that Nokhanya gave you a Visa)

Him: Ahh those days are gone this thing of chasing bitches, cheating and all that crap it gets tiring.. Now I just enjoy being a father and a good fiancé

Me: Gcwala!Kea go hlompha (I respect you)

He put his dumpie down on the table..

Him: So what's happening with you? Why are you back?

Me: What do you mean? SA is home

He gave me a weird look..

Me: Just want to be close to my Daughter and the old man

Him: So you going back to the family business?

Me: Yeah Man what else can I do? I can be dedicated to my work now since I won't have a woman irritating me when I come back home late

Him: usgcula nini esinye isfebe vele? (when are you getting another hoe)

Me: I'm done with that shit.. Relationships are not working for me anymore

Him: Naa don't give up yet who knows maybe you will attract another hoe don't forget you have a thing for prostitutes

Me: Fuck you Man!

He laughed..

Him: Maybe you need a tough cookie

Me: Is there ever going to be a girl that can stand up to me?

Him: I'm sure there is

Me: I highly doubt

Him: Just keep on looking

Me: I don't even wanna look

(Silence)

Me: Before I forget do you know this fool who is dating Kresi?

Him: Who? Shadow?

Me: Yeah him..

Him: Heard about him.. Heard he's dangerous

Me: Have you seen him before?

He shrugged his shoulders..

Him: Naa but Carl has

Me: Ayt Man..

Him: Why?

Me: Naa Nex

I drank my beer..

We looked at the girls on the dance floor, Gesh laid back on his chair tilting it a bit and checking out some girl's ass while singing along to the song..

Him: "Isina muva liyabukwa.. Akasekho obhek'emuva shona phantsi"

The girl saw that she was being checked out and she started to over exaggerate the dance moves..

Me: Thought you were now a family man

He looked at me..

Him: "I can see how her beauty is still hidden egibhitha"

He got up..

Him: Leme go dance this is one of my favourite songs

He walked over to dance with the girl, I shook my head while drinking my beer. I looked at them and noticed that her friend was looking at me busy dancing hoping I would join but I didn't, so she decided to come to me..

Her: Aw'funi ukujaiva? (don't you wanna dance)

I have this serious facial expression that intimidates people a lot, I didn't say anything I just looked at her until she got uncomfortable and walked away..

Her: Yho sorry

Gesh looked at me and shook his head then mumbled the words "You will never change"

Me: "Shona Phantsi"

He laughed..

.

.

SNOWY

I have never had so much problems that I am failing to solve they kept me awake all night that for the first time in a very long time I cried thinking of my Daughter and what Buda could possibly do to her. I thought of how I almost lost myself forever because of the damage that he caused me and I don't want Layla to experience that, I don't want my Daughter being abused in that way..

The following morning when I woke I decided to be honest with Fufu about Layla being in danger from both Buda and the person who is claiming her as his daughter. Fufu doesn't always have smart ideas but she's like a Sister to me and maybe I undermine her a lot, maybe just maybe she might help.. I waited for her to process everything..

Her: I can't believe that you never told me that your step father used to abuse you sexually

Me: Fufu focus

Her: Yes of course.. So let me get this straight you once dated a married man and a criminal at the same time?

Me: Yes

Her: And the criminal his name is Shadow?

Me: Yes has been in and out of jail a lot

She nodded..

Her: And neither of them knew that you were seeing another person?

Me: Well Shadow suspected because he was always suspicious

Her: And then you fell pregnant while dating both of them and you didn't know who the Father was but because you had already fallen in love with the married guy you convinced yourself that he is the Father, you pinned the pregnancy on him thinking that he will provide a stable home for you and Layla because he was a responsible man. He was working and everything?

Me: Yes... I knew that Layla would be better off with him I mean he had kids and seeing pictures on his phone he seemed like a good Father, he was a family man

Her: And then you expected him to leave his wife and kids?

I slowly nodded..

Her: Balance me here.. When that crossed your mind where you smoking flakka?

I looked at her..

Her: You were a mistress that got pregnant and you seriously thought he was going to leave his wife of many years for you? Risk his family for you?

Me: I know.. I was young and naive, I didn't know how life worked I lived in a ball of fairytale and fantasies

Her: And then this shadow somehow saw that you pregnant and he claimed the baby but went to jail and wasn't there throughout the whole pregnancy? And now he's back to claim Layla back again?

Me: Shadow lost his Son before I fell pregnant with Layla he was devastated and I think having Layla come into the picture was somehow going to help him live with the pain, I think he was trying to replace his Son with Layla. I mean I told him several times that Layla is not his but he insisted

Her: Then why don't you just let him take his Daughter?

Me: Are you insane?

Her: If Shadow is in Layla's life he will protect her from your monstrous step father

Me: I can't Fufu.. I don't trust Shadow he has demons of his own he is the one who made me this tough because of how he used to treat me, he is a serial rapist he is sick I think jail made him crazy somehow

Her: Why? Because he prefers Anal intercourse more? Didn't you just say he changed?

Me: when he got arrested the first time and then got released when we were having sex he wanted Anal sex when I refused he raped me Anally I wasn't able to sit for two weeks no make that I had to consult

Her: I'm sorry

Me: He is a sex addict and you can't have someone like that around your child especially if she is a girl

Her: I can imagine I mean jail has limits when it comes to sex

Me: Can we stop talking about this? It's disgusting enough

Her: And deep

Me: I just wish that I could find me another hardcore fella to protect me and my Daughter

Her: After Shadow you wanna go that road again?

Me: I don't know Fufu but I can't date a Khayone they will break him

Her: I understand you friend

My phone rang.. It was Okuhle..

Me: Kuhle

Her: Hey.. Can we meet? I'm from dropping off Layla

Me: Is everything okay?

Her: Everything is fine I think we might just find your Father

Me: Are you serious?

Her: Yeap text me your address I'll be right there

Me: Wow uhm yeah sure

Her: See you then

I hung up..

Me: That was my Sister I think she might know where my Father is

Fufu: Really?

Me: Yeap

Fufu: That's great... It's really great

Me: I hope she's for real

Fufu: I think she is.. She can't just play with something so big
Me: I truly hope so

Part 11

SNOWY

Okuhle did keep the word and came to my place so that she could tell me about my Father I had the Mother of all anxieties I mean I have always been looking forward to this day where someone was going to tell me something about my Father. She handed me the piece of Paper..

Her: Here is his address where his Mother stays I am not sure if he still lives there
I checked the address..

Me: It's not far from where Grams stays

Her: I know hey

Me: How did you get it?

Her: Mom came home and was all upset she told Grams about what happened when you came to see at work and somehow she ended up talking about where he lived, his Mother's house. I went through her old stuff while they were watching Isibaya and I got the full address
I closed my eyes letting out a sigh..

Her: Should we go there?

Me: Only if you not busy

Her: I'm game

I nodded repeatedly like a fool..

Me: We can go

Her: You doing this for Layla right?

Me: I wanna give her a better home

She smiled..

Her: Let's go

Me: You still have to tell me what it is that you do

Her: I will tell you

We walked to her car..

.

.

TSHEPISO

Me: Naledi we late!!

She came down from the stairs..

Me: Come on we already late

Her: Sorry

Me: Where is your netball kit?

Her: It's at Mom's

Me: Why didn't you tell me to fetch it?

Her: I can't play Daddy I'm hurt

Me: Well then I'll have to call your coach and tell her that..

Her: She already knows

Me: She does?

Her: Yes.. Can we go now?

Me: Yes we can

Something was off Naledi loves netball with all her heart and for the fact that she dismissed the issue like that raised a lot of questions..

We got to the car but I didn't start it..

Her: I thought you said we are late

Me: We have to talk

Her: Sounds serious

Me: I am going to ask you something and I'm not saying that I don't believe your original story but baby we have to work on facts if we going to press charges against him

She kept quiet..

Me: Did he touch you?

She still remained quiet..

Me: Poonkie Pie

She slowly shook her head no..

Me: You lied?

She nodded while looking down..

Me: Why?

She shrugged her shoulders..

Me: Why Naledi?

Her: Are you mad?

Me: I am not mad I just wanna know why

Her: Because I wanted you to come back that day I had planned to tell you when we Skype and when I saw you I couldn't hold myself because I didn't want you to leave again

I didn't know what to say..

Her: I'm sorry Daddy

Me: All of this because you wanted me back?

Her: It's because Mommy didn't want me to move to London so I thought it would be better to have you back here

Me: I understand baby and I promise I'm never going to leave you again okay?

She nodded..

Me: You have to apologize to Mom though

Her: Why?

Me: Because Mom loves this guy and she loves you too now she is caught up between you two

Her: I don't like Shadow I thought when I lied about that Mom was going to leave him.. I just wanted us to be a family again

She started crying..

Me: Mom and I cannot be Baby.. You saw how we used to fight

Her: Now you going to date another woman and she is going to take up all your attention like how Shadow is doing with Mom and you will forget all about me and always send me to visit my friends

Me: I would never put another woman before you.. You are my first lady and no one can change that, I will forever love you no matter what

I understand where she's coming from.. Parents separating is not all that easy on the kids and having to accept Step Parents in their lives is another situation, I almost initiated the most dangerous war on something that didn't happen..

.

.

KRESI

Shadow: 5..4..3..2..1..

He laid flat on the floor while I was still on his back.

Me: You wanna go again?

Him: I think that's enough push ups for this morning

Shadow is really trying to be a good boyfriend especially since the Naledi issue, last night he cooked after we had sex and this morning he woke me up with a cup of coffee and a chocolate muffin, he is really sweet..

He turned around and I fell but not hard..

He turned on his side and looked at me, I ran my hand on his body..

Me: What's will all these scars?

Him: I got stabbed a few times

Me: What happened?

Him: long story

Shadow does look like a criminal a bit but I don't wanna dwell much on that I'm always convincing myself that he grew up in a dangerous coloured hood at cape town and that's why he has all these scars and everything, maybe he has to protect himself somehow.

He kissed me while I was lost in my thoughts and his hand made it inside my underwear, he gently rubbed my clit..

I was still a bit sore from last night, rough sex seems to be what I get from most of the guys that I have dated. I stretched my hand and rubbed him, I didn't put my hand inside his boxers. He laid back on his back and pulled me to him, I got ontop of him and we continued kissing..

Him: Don't go to work today

Me: I have clients to meet

Him: You will see them tomorrow

Me: Sha..

He grabbed on to my weave tightly and French kissed me, I might as well just call my receptionist because I don't think he is going to let me go to work..

Part 12

SNOWY

I stood at the gate and looked at the 4 room house it was beautiful and very neat outside, it was a few houses away from my Grandmother's place but somehow I don't know it I have never sat foot here..

Okuhle: Are you ready?

I took a deep breath..

Me: Yes

We walked approached it and then opened the gate we walked in and made our way around and a woman was sitting next to the door, she was knitting a plastic mat..

Okuhle: Sanibonani? (greetings)

She stopped and looked at us..

Her: Yebo

She was old maybe in her late 60s or early 70s..

I didn't know what to say so Okuhle was the one who talked..

Okuhle: besicela ukubona uBab'Samson (Can we please see Mr Samson)

Her: Akekho (he is not here)

Okuhle and I looked at each other..

Her: Ningabobani? (who are you)

Now that is a difficult question..

Me: Igama lami wuMinentle (My name is Minentle)

Her eyes widened..

Her: Minentle?.. Jabulile!!.. Jabulile!!

Voice: Ma!!!

Her: Angiyikholwa ke le (I cannot believe this)

A woman walked out of the house she looked a bit older maybe in her 40s..

Her: Yini Ma? (what's wrong)

Old woman: Bona kuze bani? (look who's here)

The lady looked at us..

Lady: Ubani? (who)

Old woman: Wu Mini

Her: Minentle?

Old woman: Wuye (it is her)

Lady: Haibo sivelelwe yini namhlanje... Umntaka Samson? (it's Samson's child)

She came closer..

Her: Ave ufana no babakho (you look like your Father)

Old lady: Get a bench for them

She went inside to get a bench for us..

Old lady: Bengazi ukuthi lelanga lizofika (I knew this day would come)

I didn't expect such a welcome I thought that they were still going to ask me to prove that I am my Father's Daughter....

.
.

TSHEPISO

After dropping off Naledi at school I drove to Kresi's place so that we can talk. Before I left her at school I had a talk with her coach and she did confirm that Naledi fell during practice and that she won't be able to play until she heals, she said that she would be let back in the field after the Dr has confirmed that she is okay...

I never expected Naledi to do this I know that she is a bit difficult but to lie like this, My Daughter needs help

Her car was around so that means she didn't go to work, that's a first she cares a lot about her bridal shop to even miss a day, maybe she's sick or something. Not only her car was in the driveway but I saw another car, it was an old BMW the gusheshe kind..

I rang the door bell and waited for someone to open.

I rang it three times before the opened, it was Shadow. He was shirtless as he stood there..

Me: Is Kresi around?

Him: What do you want from her?

Me: If you haven't noticed we have a child together so where Naledi is concerned Kresi and I we always have to communicate..

He looked at me before calling her..

Him: Liefie!!

I chuckled and shook my head..

Him: So when can I expect the cops?

I gave him a weird look..

Him: You didn't press charges that I have supposedly been abusing your Daughter?

Me: You can get out of my face right now

I heard Kresi talking..

Her: Who is it?

Him: Who can it be?

She showed up behind him wearing his shirt..

Her: Ohw Tshepi

I looked at Shadow, She kissed her while grabbing her Ass Kresi felt a bit uncomfortable and then she walked away..

Her: You can come in

For some reason I felt something deep inside of me awakening, I know what I've said but I still have feelings for Kresi and seeing her enjoying herself like this in the arms of another man was difficult to digest..

She closed the door and looked at me she still had a beautiful body, I cleared my throat..

Her: Is everything okay?

Me: It's Naledi

Her: What's wrong with Naledi?

Me: She lied

Her: Lied?

Me: About Shadow abusing her

Her: I knew but why?

Me: Long story
She kept quiet...
Me: I'm sorry.. I should've never doubted you, you have always been a good Mother
Her: I understand.. I mean as a Father you always wanna protect your Daughter
Me: She will call and apologize later
Her: It's okay
A moment of silence and awkwardness passed..
Me: I should go... Have to go to work
Her: You have already started?
Me: Starting today
Her: Okay good luck
She opened the door for me, I walked and stood very close to her.. I whispered next to her.
Me: You look beautiful
Her: Thank you
Me: Bye
Her: Bye
I walked out...

.

.

SNOWY

They even made us some juice and gave us biscuits..
Old lady: Mina ngigu gogo wakho (I am your Grandmother)
I nodded..
Her: Uma Ntsibande ozala ubabakho (I am your Paternal Grandmother)
Me: It's nice to finally meet you
Her: No it's finally nice to meet you.. Ubabakho uhlala akhuluma ngawe njalo makazile(Your Father always talks about you when he is around)
Me: Ohw uphi yena uBaba? (Where is he)
Koko: Uhlala eMidrand (he lives in Midrand)
The lady came back again..
Koko: Now this is your Aunty she is the last born uJabulile
Jabulile: Kodwa mara umuhle yazi (You are are beautiful)
Me: Thank you
She sat down..
Me: This is my little Sister Okuhle
They greeted her..
Jabulile: Mhlambe washo ukuthi sakulahla (maybe you think we long abandoned you)
Me: Kwenzakalani? (what happened)
Koko: Eyy yinde indaba (it's a long story)
Jabulile: Kufuneka ubabakho akuchazele (Your Father has to explain)
Koko: Call her Jabu
Jabu: Let me get my phone
She stood up and walked away..
Me: Uhlala nobani? (who does he live with)
Koko: He was married then his wife died now he lives with his wife's son
Me: He doesn't have any other kids?
Koko: No unfortunately his wife was a barren
Me: So the wife's son is not his biological son?
Koko: No he is not
Me: What is he doing for a living?
Koko: He has a very successful plumbing business he made partners with some white man and they making reasonable money
I nodded..

Jabulile came back..

Her: I called him

Koko: Uthini? (what is he saying)

Jabu: He wants Mini to go to his place so they can talk he can't come because he is at work

Koko: Give her the address

Jabu: I'll write it for you

Koko: He has always wanted to meet you

Part 13

SNOWY

We stood at the gate looking at the house it wasn't big and it wasn't small either, it had pavement all around. I looked at the street and it had other beautiful house too, bond houses..

Okuhle: And we are here

Me: The house looks beautiful

Okuhle: It is

I walked up to the gate but she didn't follow me..

Me: Are you coming?

Her: No

Me: Why?

Her: You need to do this on your own

Me: Okuhle come on

Her: You have to do this on your own

I sighed..

Me: Thank you

Her: Call me

Me: I will

She got into her car and left. I stood there for another minute or so and then I decided to go in. I went all around to knock at the kitchen door. I knocked a few times the first few knocks were soft when I saw that no one was coming out, I knocked harder..

The door opened and a guy stood there holding on to it..

Me: Hi

Him: Hi

Me: Uhm.. My name is Snow.. I mean Minentle and I..

Him: So you are Minentle?

Me: Uhm yes

Him: Come in girl been waiting for you

I walked in and he closed the door..

Him: You look beautiful than I anticipated

Me: Than y..

Him: Sam told me that you coming he went out a few minutes ago said he had an emergency at work

I nodded..

Him: I'm Sabata.. Sam's step son

Me: Nice to meet you

I stretched my hand and he just came closer then hugged me..

Him: Can I make you anything to eat?

Me: Err.. No thanks I'm fine

Him: You lucky you found me here.. I'm off today

I followed him to the lounge..

Him: I work at La Buella restaurant

Me: Sounds fancy

Him: It is.. I am dating the owner

Me: How old is she?

Him: It's a He..

Me: Wait.. You tell..

Him: I'm gay sweetie and the owner is not, I am not sure where to place him because he is married to a woman and having an affair with me

Me: I see

Him: If you want I can get you a job there.. Pays really well

Me: It does?

He nodded..

Me: Well I don't have matric

Him: Didn't you hear me saying I'm sleeping with the owner?

Me: Ohw

His phone rang..

Him: It's work.. I'm sure the new waitress doesn't know how Tpee likes his food

Me: Tpee?

Him: Tshep.. You know what let me take this

He stood up and then walked away..

.

.

TSHEPISO

I looked at the food and then I looked at her..

Me: Where is Sabata?

Her: He is off today

I glanced down on the plate again..

Me: Who are you again?

Her: Miranda

Me: You can take this and eat it in your spare time or lunch time because this is utterly crap you didn't pack my food the way I want it.. I'll be calling your boss

La Buela is my favorite restaurant has always been even way before I went to London. Sabata is the only one who knows how my food is supposed to be, at first I had problems with his sexuality but then when he prepared me a meal I just wanted to eat more and more of his food. He is always clean, nails always short and clean, he has a good hygiene too. Despite his choice of lifestyle I like that he takes his job seriously..

I took my phone and went on Twitter since I was waiting to meet a client, I saw that Kresi had posted a few pictures of her and Shadow. She also tweeted that this weekend they going to cape town, she seems happy, she seems very happy. I went to my contact list and called her, took her long to answer..

Her: Hello?

Me: Eyy

Her: Uhm is everything okay?

Me: Yeah everything is fine

Her: So what's with the call?

Me: Ya I wanted to let you know that I am getting Naledi a therapist

Her: That's good

Me: I thought that we can both be present for her first therapy session

Her: I will be there when?

Me: This weekend

Her: This weekend?

Me: Yes

Her: I.. I can't make it thus weekend

Me: So sad she really wanted for you to be there, she really wants to fix her relationship with you

Her: Okay then I'll see

Me: Remember it's for Naledi

Her: Ya I hear you

Me: Bye

I hung up and laughed..

.

.

SNOWY

Sabata: I have already spoken to Bae so you can just show up for an interview

Me: I don't know Sabata I think it's too quick I mean I haven't even met my Father

He poured me wine..

Him: Are you dating?

Me: No

Him: Are you looking?

Me: Well

Him: Rich people eat there baby tips start from R700

Me: Really?

Him: You can find yourself a rich Bae

With the 15k that we owe Caiphus this can work..

Me: Let me talk to my Father first

Him: Are you nervous?

Me: A little

What Sabata was saying made a ton of sense if I get a job the court can allow me to take my Daughter..

We heard the door opening..

Sabata: That must be him

I put the glass down and my heart literally sank down to my knees as I heard footsteps nearing..

Part 14

SNOWY

He walked in wearing his blue overall and boots he was a bit dirty his overall had mud here and there but he wasn't smelling as how I would expect since he has a plumbing business..

Sabata: You have a visitor

I didn't know how to react whether I should stand up or what. He looked handsome and he didn't look that much old, he still looks fit like he can do anything and everything for someone his age.

He looked at me for a while I couldn't put a word to his expression..

Him: Sabata please give us some space

He stood up and left the room..

He sat down opposite me..

Him: You have grown up

I kept quiet..

Him: You know you have a lot to ask and..

Me: Why did you leave?

He looked at me, I was starting to get emotional something that doesn't happen to me that much. This man is sitting here opposite me is the reason why I had a shitty childhood...

Me: Mom found herself another man and he used to rape me

His eyes widened..

Me: From when I was a little girl until he killed Bongane sending him to jail made me an enemy at home I had to move out, at the age of 16 I lived in the streets whilst you lived here comfortably.

Very comfortable

Him: That's not true

Me: My Brother died defending me and you didn't even come to his funeral your own Son's funeral

I wiped my tears..

Me: Why did you leave? You looking at me right now and you don't know that men have made me their playground, I have been abused left and right and not even once did you ever think that you have a Daughter that you should check up on

He cleared his throat..

Him: Your Mom and I met in high school we were very much inlove. Unfortunately when I completed matric I didn't have money to go and further my studies so I started my plumbing business and it wasn't making me enough money but I could still afford to buy a bit of groceries and help here and there. Your Grandmother was the one paying our rent since your Mom wasn't working and that made me a bad Father and a bad partner to your Mother. Your Grandmother would come on a daily basis to swear at me, call me useless turn your Mother against me at times. You were too young to understand what was going on you were still a baby. Though what she used to do degraded my dignity as a man but..

He chuckled..

Him: One day I came back from work and she had thrown my clothes all over the yard telling me that I should go if I don't one day I will find your Mother in bed with another man. I forced through and stayed until your Mother started to have an affair with what's his name? Buda? Something like that

That was a shock because I thought Buda came into our lives recently after my parents had broken up..

Him: That's when I took my things and left after your Grandmother had told me that your Mother has a new man a better man who will take care of my kids better than the R300 I was putting on the table. Your Mother never said anything she always went with what your Grandmother said I didn't know how to process all of this..

Him: I'm sorry Mini I should've tried harder to take you but the judge was going to take her side and favour her.. All along I thought that you were being taken care of I thought that if I force the issue I might take you away from a good life I didn't know that you were being abused. I have failed you and sorry won't even restore what you have lost or what was taken from you, I wish that I could've tried harder and harder but all you need to know is that I never forgot about you not even once I have always been looking forward to this day, I couldn't even go to your Grandmother's house to visit you your Grandmother hated me with Passion she didn't want me for her daughter. I could've lived with that but what killed me more was that your Mother defended her and stood by her, that's when I saw that I'm fighting a losing battle I understand where he is coming from with everything but then again that is still no excuse for him to have just packed up and left..

Him: I know that it might seem as if like it's too late but then I don't wanna lose you again, I want you in my life and I understand that it won't take two days to fix what has been broken and what happened but please I wanna be in your life

This was overwhelming I don't know what to think and say he is coming in too hard..

Him: I don't know where you living and your current state of living but do you even know that should anything happen this house and all my savings are yours? One would consider this weird giving everything away to my Daughter whom I never thought that I could ever reunite with

Me: It is kind of stupid

He laughed..

Him: I'm truly Mini

I had a lot to think about but now my Daughter is my number one priority..

Me: I have a daughter

Him: Really?

Me: Yes she is 5

Him: I would like to meet her

Me: That's the problem.. She lives with Mom and Grandma, I really wanna get her back because

Buda is getting released soon and I don't want him abusing Layla. That man is very cruel he will abuse my Daughter just to revenge me for throwing him behind bars

He nodded..

Me: Grandma would never give me Layla even if we go to court she will make me look like an unstable Mother

Him: Are you working?

Me: No

Him: We need to find you a job

Sabata: Already taken care off

He walked in..

Him: You guys really thought that I was gone?

He sat down..

Dad: If the court can see that you trying and we bring out your past on why your Daughter cannot stay with them because of your Mother's abusive boyfriend or husband the court might give you your Daughter

That was a relief to hear, At least there's a possibility that I can be given my Daughter back..

.

.

KRESI

Me: So be a of that we will have to cancel our trip to Cape Town this coming weekend..

He kept quiet and looked at me..

Him: Do you see what he is doing?

Me: Shadow this is my Daughter we talking about

Him: I understand that but your ex is using your Daughter to cause problems in our relationship, why didn't he first talk to you about the therapy situation? On when it would be appropriate to take your Daughter to therapy?

Me: It doesn't matter Shadow as long as I'm fixing my relationship with my Daughter that's all that matters

He shrugged his shoulders and walked out of the room..

Me: Where are you going now?

Him: I need some fresh air

.

.

SNOWY

He ended up showing me pictures of him and my Mom and how happily inlove they used to be I can't believe that he kept them even after they separated. I could see that he genuinely loved her even the tone of his voice when he speaks about her has a lot of pain in it..

Me: You guys seemed happy

Him: We were happy

I just realized that my Grandmother has messed up a lot of lives because of her evil heart..

I took a deep breath and then exhaled..

Me: I'll do it.. I'll move in with you

He was amazed..

Me: Most importantly I'm doing it for my Daughter she needs a stable and safe environment

Him: I promise you that I will never let anything happen to her

I have never really lived a normal life one where I have a job and live in a normal home so this is going to be a first.. It's a very big change that I am willing to welcome..

Part 15

SNOWY

My Father and I drove to my place to get my things it was hurtful to leave Fufu behind because

she declined coming with us. She told it straight that since she has Caiphus on her back she doesn't want him terrorizing my new home and I promised her that I will help her with this Caiphus issue...

It was very unusual to be in a normal home with a family, I have lived in the streets alone then I meant Fufu and ever since then it has always been Me and Fufu all the way now that I have to accept the change environment it was weird, it was very weird..

Nothing much happened for the rest of the day I was just taking my things from the suitcase and putting them away in the wardrobe and also Fufu showed me around the neighbourhood later on my Dad took us out, it was very nice. I really enjoyed..

The next morning Sabata and I woke up and prepared ourselves for work, well I wouldn't call it my job because he is still going to talk to the owner for me but he asked me to come along so I can see how the restaurant is and how it operates. I had no formal clothes to wear so I wore my black jean and a white shirt with black pumps. I combed my big afro and put on a bit of makeup..

Sabata: You ready?

Me: Yes

Him: Let's go

We walked to his car he is driving the old Ford figo..

.

.

TSHEPISO

My first meeting was at my favourite restaurant the La Buela restaurant with an old client of mine that canceled his contract when I resigned, my Father has done more damage than I had anticipated..

I looked at the time and I was 30min early so I will order something to eat while I wait for the client..

.

.

KRESI

I was in my office going through my client list when I saw Shadow standing at the door holding a cup of coffee..

Him: Morning

I smiled..

Him: Morning

He walked in..

Me: How did you know that I needed coffee?

Him: I didn't know I just assumed

He walked over to me and kissed me on my forehead..

Him: Here is your coffee

Me: Thank you

He sat down on the chair opposite mine..

Me: So did you see your Daughter?

Him: No I didn't

Something is very weird with this whole situation Shadow promised that I will meet his Daughter soon but now he has been coming up with a lot of excuses that don't even make sense..

Him: You will meet her soon don't worry

Me: That's what you have been saying

Him: It's not an easy situation trust me Just like you and Tshepi have issues it's the same way that me and my baby mama have issues

Me: I understand

Him: So dinner tonight at my place?

I nodded..

Him: I'll cook

Me: Aren't you sweet?

He laughed..

.

SNOWY

La Buena restaurant was something that I have never seen before it was beautiful and clean to a point where you could just eat from the floor..

Sabata: This way

It was divided into two sections, the bar and the main sitting area where everyone eats..

I stood in the middle and looked around admiring every part of it. Customers who were sitting and eating looked rich, it had more white customers than black ones..

Me: Wow this place is...

Sabata: Too magnificent to put into words?

Me: Yes

We walked over and stood behind the counter..

Him: Let me go and put my bag away

He left me still standing there mesmerized by this place. He came back after a few minutes..

Him: Let's get down to business

Me: Uhm okay

Him: Here put this name tag so everyone can see that you are a trainee I will introduce you later to all the staff that is on shift today

Me: Okay I put on the name tag just above my left breast

Some blonde waitress came to us..

Her: Sabs your Person is here

Sabs: What is he doing here? He doesn't eat breakfast here.. He is never this early

Her: A client stood him up so it's cold black

Sabs: Please not code black

Her: Good luck

She walked away..

Me: And?

He exhaled..

Him: See that handsome man sitting over there?

I looked at him..

Me: Ya?

Him: He is code black in this restaurant.. If he comes in I don't care what you were doing you stop everything and go attend to him do you understand?

Me: Is he an important person?

His eyes widened...

Him: You did not just ask that

Me: I don't know him

Him: That's Tshepiso Thobekgale the.. Don't you read newspapers?

Me: Uhm..

The phone rang and he picked it up..

Him: La Buena restaurant Sabata speaking Hello?... Yes please hold on

He lowered the phone..

Him: It's the Boss please attend to Thobekgale and Snowy approach with caution please we cannot afford to lose him he is an important customer in this restaurant

Me: I understand

Him: You must do more than just understanding he is the 3rd richest customer that the restaurant has so please

Me: Shouldn't he be attended by someone else?

Her: Do you see someone else here?

Me: No

Him: Go (Whispering)

I slowly made my way to his table. Sabata is really taking a huge risk with me especially if this is an important customer. I stood next to him and collected myself he was reading something on the documents that were laying on the table in front of him..

Me: Good morning Sir.. I am Snowy and I'm.. I..

I am not very good with these things..

Me: Would you like something else?

He ignored me and continued reading whatever it was that he was reading..

Me: Sir?

Still nothing..

I turned away and walked over to Sabata shrugging my shoulders..

He put the phone down..

Me: That guy..

Him: Babes you have to deal with it I have an important matter to attend to.. If you going to work here you going to have to deal with code black

He walked away. I turned and looked at Mr code black. He closed the file and stood up, There was no check book in front of him or anything he just walked away. I looked around and I didn't know what to do but I won't let him walk out with paying so I ran after him, I caught him just as his driver was opening the car door for me. I don't know what I was thinking but I grabbed his arm, He turned immediately and looked at me giving me a deadly look. Standing in front of him face to face Lord he was the most handsome thing that I have ever seen, I let go of his arm..

Me: I just wanted to let you know that you didn't pay

He looked at his jacket where I had grabbed his arm and then he looked at me..

Him: Do you have any idea who I am?

That's the question I hate with all my heart when rich people think they're special..

Me: No but you still didn't pay

He looked at his driver..

Driver: Mam' this is Mr Thobekgale

Me: I still don't know him and Mr Thobekgale you still didn't pay your bill

He chuckled and shook his head..

Me: I don't know what's special about who you are but you still didn't pay and I was chosen to mind your table If you don't pay it's going to be a problem for me I might not get hired and I need this job

Him: Do I look like I care what..

Me: Just pay the damn bill would you?

The shock of his life was reflected by his eyes..

Him: You cannot address me like that

I folded my arms and we looked at each other, it was a serious stare down and I stared him down. He took out his wallet and then took out a black card..

Him: Pin is the first 4 digits of the card number

He threw it at me..

He then got in the car..

Me: lonely miserable piece of..

Him: Are you saying something?

I picked up his card..

Me: Have a nice day Sir

I then walked away..

Part 16

SNOWY

I went back in holding his card I put it away when Sabbie came to the counter..

Me: Your important customer didn't pay
Him: Ohw ya he pays 3 months in advance
Me: Really?
Him: Yeap and he doesn't eat here everyday so for the other days he is not eating here means we just got free money
Me: So this guy is really rich?
Him: That's what I have been telling you
Me: Can I please ask you for a favour?
Him: Yes?
Me: Can I please go out for a few hours?
Him: Are you serious?
Me: Yes I am
Him: Snowy do you want this job or not?
Me: I don't have the job yet I'm just here to observe and learn until your person decides to hire me when he comes tomorrow
Him: And this is why you should learn a bit today so that you can impress him tomorrow
Me: It's just for a few hours motho!
Him: You not serious here I am trying to help you get a good job and you don't want
Me: If we going to try this Sibling thing..
Him: Snowy just go before I change my mind
I looked at him..
Him: What?
Me: Can I please use your car?
Him: Now you insane.. Do you even have a license?
Me: I don't but I know how to drive plus I'm not going far just running a few errands
He exhaled..
Him: I'm defeated
Me: Please
He searched his pockets and came out with the keys
Me: I'll bring it back before you knock off
Him: You better!!
I took the keys from him and walked out. On my way to the car I texted Fufu:
"Get ready I am coming with 15k"

.
.

TSHEPISO

I have never really had a woman stand up to me like how that girl stood up to me, I have always been intimidating and a monster to deal with but what I experienced this morning was something I cannot put into words. Not only was her being cheeky something that was admirable but also she was very beautiful. Not too much makeup, beautiful round facial structure, small lips and a perfectly combed afro. She has a beautiful thick body and not forgetting that she's a bit short. I didn't know that I was deeply lost in my thoughts until I saw Carl standing at the door..
Him: You need to deal with the security around this place it's crazy, took me 5min to get here
Me: I am an important person I have to be protected
He walked in and sat down..
Him: You not the president nigga so chill
Me: What brings here? At this time?
Him: I haven't seen you since you came back thought I should drop by
Me: How is work coming along?
Him: I'm starting to get bored
Me: Here we go
Him: How did you handle the situation with Shadow?
Me: Long story but it's sorted

Him: I hope it is

(Silence)

Him: So who were you thinking off?

Me: Excuse me?

Him: When I walked in you had that retarded "I am falling in love" smile

Me: I was thinking about my Daughter

Him: Yeah right

My phone beeped, I checked it. It was an Sms alerting me that 15k was withdrawn from my account..

Carl: Everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine

I put it down again..

Me: How is Terra and the little one?

.

.

SNOWY

After withdrawing the money I went straight to go and fetch Fufu so that we can go and pay Caiphus. What I'm doing is a serious crime but then again how did I get his pin if he didn't give it to me? He can't really press charges when he is the one who gave me the card and pin I have that to defend myself with. It will be his word against mine plus there was a witness, his driver.. Fufu was speechless when she saw the 15k..

Her: How?.. I me..

Me: Your debt already taken care of now you can move with us in my Father's house without anyone being on your back

Her: How did you manage to get this money?

Me: Code black

Her: What is that?

Me: You wouldn't understand

Her: You don't know how grateful I am

Me: You still going to be grateful because we have some shopping to do I took out the card..

Me: I have a black card

Her eyes popped out..

Her: Ohh my word!!!!

Me: Anything that you want

This was better than winning the lottery..

.

.

TSHEPISO

For the next few hours I kept on getting notifications of transactions that were made with my card, that girl was really working my card..

I was at the cafeteria getting something to eat and then I went back to my office, Detective Maurice was already waiting for me. He is a personal friend of mine I know him through Carl..

Him: Hey Man

Me: Eyy

I gave him a handshake..

Him: How was London?

Me: It was good

I went and sat on my chair..

Him: It's good to have you back Man.. You were far

Me: Yeah I was

Him: This cannot be a social call

Me: unfortunately it's not

Him: What have you done?
Me: I didn't do anything
Him: I don't understand
Me: I want you to arrest someone for me
Him: Why?
Me: credit card fraud
He whistled..
Him: Was your card stolen? Why didn't you report it at the bank?
Me: It's a long story she didn't exactly steal it but she is using it without my permission, I am not looking for a case that's going to drag just send her to jail for a week or so
Him: Doing you all these favours puts my job in the line
Me: You act like I don't pay you
He kept quiet for a while..
Him: It's going to cost you though
Me: I know
My phone beeped again..
Me: See?
Him: So when should I do it?
Me: Maybe tomorrow she works at La Buena restaurant very beautiful chubby girl a bit short and she has an afro. She wears a red lipstick, has small lips and..
He started laughing..
Him: Let me understand something.. You have a thing for this girl?
Me: No I don't
Him: Yes you do
Me: How much are you going to charge me?
Him: Since it revolves around love and everything I will do it for free
Me: Love is a strong word
Him: Infatuation?
Me: Nothing of that nature Dawg
He stood up..
Him: At least you won't grow old alone.. I'll see you around
Me: Cool

Part 17

TSHEPISO

This girl must've spent 40k so far only for today including the withdrawals she made. Her actions and the level of spending says a lot about her, it tells me that her life has always revolved around hustling, stealing and somehow caahrpting men. It also proves to me that she is a risk taker, who the hell in their right mind would spend money that is not theirs and what she's doing is breaking the law in all ways.

Naledi walked into my office I didn't even realize that it was in the afternoon I have been swamped by a lot of work..

Me: Why didn't you tell the driver to drop you off at home?

Her: Grandpa is not there.. He is hardly home now that he has a girlfriend

Me: Bontle?

Her: I don't like her Brother

Me: Well Daddy has a lot to do today so we going to go home late

Her: Can I go do shopping at the mall then?

I took out my wallet and gave it to her..

Me: Who are you going with?

Her: Alone

Me: You can't go to the mall alone Baby
Her: With the driver
Me: Naledi you need an adult there with you
Her: I am 16 and the driver is an adult
Me: Baby no
Her: Tpee I'm 16
I looked at her..
Me: What?
She kept quiet..
Me: You never call me that
Her: Sorry
Me: I'll call Mom
Her: Daddys where is the black card?
Me: I forgot about that I lost it
Her: You lost it (Shocked) how are we going to live
Me: Use the gold cheque card
Her: Okay
Me: Let me finish up here so I can call Mom for you
Her: Okay

.
.

SNOWY

Fufu and I went crazy on the black card as much as a part of me was scared but Another part of everything saw this as a blessing in disguise..

Fufu: Whose money is it that we spending soo much?

Me: Don't worry about that

Fufu: I mean we have spent a lot

Me: Pack your things so that we can go

Her: Err about that..

She looked at me..

Her: I don't think I should move in with you and your Father I am happy here, this has been our home for a very long time. Might not be the greatest flat but hey it has memories, we created memories here.

I looked around..

Her: You can always visit me and I'll always visit you too

Me: It's hard that we have to live far from each other I'm still trying to get through life without you

Her: It is hard, it's also hard for me but remember you doing this for your Daughter

I nodded..

Me: Let me go and fetch my step Brother before he strangles me.. Wanna come over for dinner?

Her: I'd like that a lot

Me: Let's go

.
.

KRESI

I looked at my Assistant..

Me: Pins

She brought me pins..

Me: Thank you

After putting the pins I stood up..

Me: And?

Bride: It looks beautiful

Me: That's how it's going to look when it's finally done

Her: It really looks beautiful

Me: Just make sure you don't gain weight before the wedding day
She laughed..
Assistant: Ms Thobekgale your phone is ringing
Me: I am busy it can wait
Her: It's your ex husband
I looked at the Bride..
Me: Please excuse me for a couple of seconds
Bride: No problem
My Assistant gave me my phone and I walked away..
I called him..
Him: Hey
Me: Is there something wrong?
Him: What's with the attitude?
Me: I don't know Tshepi maybe I am busy
Him: Naledi wants to go out shopping I'm busy too and there's no one to take care
Me: Are you serious? Tshepi I have a client
Him: Between my job and yours which one is important? Should I leave mine will you be able to pay for Naledi's school fees? Buy her everything she wants? Kresi you don't support our daughter I do everything and all I'm asking you to do is to take her shopping that's all
Me: So must I leave my client?
Him: I don't care what you do
Me: It's even late shops are going to close soon
Him: Kresi your Daughter wants to go to do shopping I'm busy, I run a multimillion rand company not a multi thousand rand useless bridal shop
Me: I feel like there's mo..
Him: Get your ass here, take your Daughter to the mall plus we have to talk!
He hung up..

.
.

SNOWY

Sabata still had 3 hours before he knocks off so I decided to go and meet up with my Sister Okuhle to tell her what happened..
She was really happy that my Father accepted me and that we are working on getting to know each other soon..
Although she was happy for me but I could see that something was bothering her deeply.
Me: Okuhle what's wrong?
Her: It's nothing really
Me: Talk to me
Her eyes filled up with tears..
Me: What's happening?
Her: Buda is coming home soon
Me: We have talked about it I know
Her: What you don't know is that he used to molest me
Me: What?
Her: All those times watching cartoons with him while you sleeping he used to molest me That was news to me. I tried taking it all in for the sake of Okuhle, so that she won't have to go through what I went through but it seems as if like it was useless..
Her: His blood is boiling Snowy he is coming back and he is coming back for revenge, already he has talked to his contacts and he will find you just like he is going to come after me, remember though in his trial I was put in a private room to testify he knows that I testified too I could leave home but I can't leave Layla and Grandmother has full custody of Layla you know she will never let her go
Just when I thought things were getting better but they weren't. I glanced down on the table all

confused and then I saw the black card, his words right then rang next to my ears..
"Do you know who I am"

Part 18

KRESI

I know that a lot of people will think that or say I am a very big fool, but you would never understand the pain of being a Mother and don't have a healthy relationship with your Daughter. Naledi is a difficult child, she was brought up differently and she did take from her Father here and there but the fact still remains that she is my Daughter and I will always put her first. I drove to Tshepi's workplace immediately when I was done with my client, when I arrived there I quickly made my way to his office...

I found him sitting at his desk, he was on a call. I stood at the door and waited for him to finish...

Him: Yes.. Thank you again Mrs fourie.. Bye

He hung up..

Him: You are late

I looked at the time..

Him: I ended up asking one of the female interns to go with her

Me: I canceled with a client for you to tell me this?

Him: She waited for you and if she didn't go shops would've closed

I didn't say nothing I turned and walked out but stopped, I turned around and looked at him..

Me: Are you using my Daughter to torture me?

He looked at me..

Him: What?

Me: Are you using Naledi to someone torture me and ruin my relationship with Shadow?

He chuckled..

Him: Don't be full of yourself Kresi you not all that

Me: Then why are you doing this?

Him: What am I doing? I am just trying to make you think of your Daughter and put her first!

Me: I do put my Daughter first!

Him: If you did then Naledi wouldn't have been lying and all that shit!!

I laughed..

Me: What exactly is it that you want from me? You already took my Daughter away from me what is it you want now? My soul?

He kept quiet..

Me: You divorced me and moved to London. I was miserable, I couldn't even get out of bed in the morning having to fully take care of a teenager that hates me and wants nothing to do with me but I did it! I raised my Daughter while you went and enjoyed life!

Him: Hey! Don't make it sound like I never took care of my child, even though I was far but you got money every month

Me: Money Tshepi? I needed more than just money! Your Daughter was depressed, not being able to see you for two years knowing very well that Naledi loves you it hurt her it killed her. I had to deal with the moods and everything! When shadow came into the picture Naledi hated him because she thought I was trying to replace you in her life!! Tshepi I am tired okay? Naledi chose you and I have accepted. I have accepted that my Daughter is going to come back to me and have a relationship with me when she's ready please don't use her to get to me It hurts. I know that I don't talk much and you have always taken advantage of that to abuse me but please let me go. What you doing to me right now would you like it if another guy did it to Naledi?

He kept quiet as tears streamed down my cheeks..

Me: I'm tired please, both emotionally and mentally

He kept quiet for a while..

Him: I..

He cleared his throat..

Him: I have been following you on social media and when I saw you at your house in his tshirt and saw how glowing you were, you even gained weight just showed me how happy you are and I couldn't understand why you were never this happy with me. Why were you never this happy with me even when I tried to change? Remember we tried therapy?

Me: You gave up on us

Him: But you were always crying every day and pressuring me about the divorce

I wiped my tears..

Me: My womb was removed because of you Shadow can never have a child with me because of that so if you think I'm happy think about that, I'll only have one child unless we decide to adopt I wiped my tears when I heard my phone ring, I took it out from my inside my bag and answered it..

Me: Hun

Shadow: Lif lif

I sniffed..

Him: What is wrong?

I looked at Tshepi as I walked out..

Him: And don't say it's nothing

Me: Just had an altercation with my Ex husband but it's okay

He hung up..

Me: Shadow?

I looked at my phone and then put it away..

.

.

SNOWY

For the first time in a very long time I drove up to my Grandmother's house, I had the courage to go and face her after running away from home at the age of 16..

When we got there I thought that I would have fear when we come face to face but I didn't, seeing her again brought up anger. Anger that I have always coded my pain with..

She allowed me in and let me sit in the lounge with Okuhle sitting next to her. This house hasn't changed, it's still the same as how it was when I was young..

When I thought that she had went to get us something to drink she actually came back into the room with Layla, when my eyes landed on my daughter I felt something deep inside of me moving. Layla tried to go to Okuhle but my Grandmother stopped her, she picked her up and sat her on her lap..

Grams: Snowy it's been a while

My focus was on Layla who was sucking her thumb.

Grams: I am sure you not here to catch up

Me: Not at all

Grams: Sikunceda ngani? (what can we help you with)

Okuhle and I looked at each other..

Grams: I see Okuhle you turned on us and now you siding with a stranger

That's how I know her with emotional blackmail..

Me: Can we have Layla leave the room?

Grams: Why?

Me: I don't think she should be here because it seems like already we might have an altercation

Her: Okuhle is not going anywhere.. Plus who are you to decide? Where were you for 5 years? I raised her so right now I am her foster Mother

I shook my head while rubbing my hands together..

Grams: Okuhle umletheleni lo la kwami? (Okuhle why did you bring this one here in my house)

Okuhle started being a bit scared, I could hear her voice breaking..
Okuhle: Err.. She is here because..
Me: I am here because of my Daughter
Grams: Sorry, what? Daughter what? I didn't get that
Me: I think you heard that very well
She started looking around..
Her: Which Daughter?
Me: Grams don't even try
Her: I am just confused
Me: I know that Buda is getting released soon and my Daughter is not safe here
She laughed..
Her: Alehle ilanga lixoshwe amajuba (Let the sun fall and let it be chased by pigeons)
She looked at us..
Her: Manje what's the problem with that?
Me: After what happened to me I don't think it's safe to have him around my child
Her: Yey wena! Are you seriously claiming a child that is not yours?
Me: I gave birth to Layla
Her: I raised her!
I looked at Layla and I tried to keep my cool because of her..
Okuhle: Grams you don't know what happened to me and Snowy.. Buda is my biological Father but he used to touch me in..
Grams: Voetsek wena shut up!!! Don't you dare say anything. When he got arrested all his money went to you, you grew up and you was given all his money. You were able to buy a car and feed yourself while you never went to any Varsity after matric and today he is evil? Wasn't he evil when you accepted his money? Masikunika yona you accepted it didn't say anything!
Ungalinge ukhulume nex (don't say anything)
Okuhle stood up and went out because she was getting emotional..
She looked at me..
Her: There is no child you getting I raised Layla ungena i Preschool yabe lungu because of me! I bought her nappies, formula milk and everything where were you? You were all over uthengisa umzimba ngunda ndini! (you were selling your body you Prostitute)
I could feel that I was at the verge of exploding so I stood up and walked out too..

.
.
TSHEPISO

Instead of Naledi coming back she had the driver drop her off at home. I wasn't going to finish all my work so I took some of the files with me and went out to my car while whistling and singing in between..
Me: "I'm a sucker for pain..(whistling).. I'm a sucker for pain I got the squad tatted on me from my neck to my ankle.. (Whistling)"
I passed the security guard sitting on the chair at the basement parking..
Me: Eyy Joe
I walked up to my car still whistling until I realized that something was not right, Joe was looked like he was sleeping on his chair. It's unusual for him to sleep or to keep quiet when I greet..
I stopped and checked the Cemerax they were facing the other way. Something was not right..
Shit is about to pop up and I don't have my gun with me, it's in my car..
I heard footsteps approaching me and a familiar voice singing..
Voice: "The dangerous under the sun, ain't nobody fucking with me man. Somebody's going to die today"
Turning around is going to be another situation because I don't know what weapon he has..

Part 19

TSHEPISO

I turned around to face him and he punched me very hard across the face. That punch gave me a concussion for a few seconds, I only realized then that he had a chain wrapped around his hand. He made his way to me to attack me further more but as soon as he tried to punch me again I blocked him out with my suitcase and that made the chain on his hand to hurt him, he took a few steps back. The punch left an excruciating pain especially on my nose bridge I think he broke my nose in a way and my vision was blurry.

Fighting with Shadow is going to be a bit of a challenge because that's something he used to do 24/7 while he was locked up, I am sure he used to fight a lot in Prison and on my side I train a lot so we going to do this all night..

Him: This is a warning stay away from my woman!!!

He then walked away. I went to my car still in pain like that and I had a nose bleed too, I won't be able to drive home in this state so instead I called my Doctor to come to the office and check me. Give me something for the pain and stop the bleeding somehow..

.

.

SNOWY

It was useless going back and forth about this with my Grandmother so I took Okuhle and we left. Okuhle didn't wanna leave Layla alone with them but we had no choice, and I couldn't leave Okuhle behind for my Grandmother to keep on throwing words at her and use emotional blackmail because she is very much convinced that Okuhle is now taking my side..

She was very upset about this that when we got to my Dad's house she went straight to bed and slept. My Father came home later on am I explained everything to him, I could see that he really wanted to help but he didn't know how the court might not give me full custody of Layla..

Dad: You getting a job will definitely help a lot.. If the judge can see that you working they might give you full custody and also considering the fact that this Buda of a person has been sexually abusing you and his own Daughter will work on your favour. I mean he went to jail

Me: But he went to jail for murder not rape

Dad: How did Okuhle testify against him if the Murder thing wasn't brought up

Me: I really don't know what happened I was young and confused a lot was just happening and I was scared

I exhaled..

Him: I failed you once and I am not going to fail you again I promise you

I nodded..

Him: Go to bed and try to think less of this issue, I will contact Clientel their lawyers might help I mean I pay every month.. We will get your Daughter out of that house

Me: I truly hope so

Him: Let me go and fetch Sabata

Me: Aghhh I even forgot about him

Him: It's fine you are under a lot of stress

He stood up..

Him: Go to bed and I'll fix this

Me: Thank you

.

.

TSHEPISO

My Doctor said that I shouldn't go to work for a couple of days this morning I have to go for an X ray to see how much damage has been done..

Siphokazi: It doesn't hurt?

Me: It does but I have a high tolerance for pain

Dad: What exactly happened?

Me: Kresi's new person attacked me down at the basement when I was going to my car

Dad: I told you about this.. Kresi has always been bad news
Siphokazi: It looks really bad
Me: I'll go for an X ray the Dr thinks that I might need surgery
Dad: I'll drive you
Siphokazi: Are you going to lay charges?
Me: No
Her: Why?
Me: Then it will make me look like a bitch and I am a bitch I will take care of him
Dad: No one is taking care of anything I will deal with this issue and please stay away from Kresi
I thought you said you done with women and dating
Me: I am done
Dad: Then what's with this nonsense?
Me: It's just a retarded misunderstanding
Dad: You are a brand of our family companies both the pharmaceutical company and the college
if you go out Paparazzi is going to write a story which clients would tolerate a violent CEO?
Me: Vic I know
Dad: Then get your shit together! You are not going to put this family through that shit again you
no longer a child! You are a Father for heaven's sake behave!
Siphokazi: Vic..
Dad: This is between me and my Son
Me: If this is the type of shit that we going to go through everyday I might as well fucken move
out!
Dad: Fuck all you want and if you going to always behave like a hooligan you can leave! I am not
going to live with a grown ass man who behaves like a child
Me: You know what fuck this!.. Siphokazi stop let me go
Siphokazi: Tshepi wait
Dad: If you leave know that you not taking Naledi with
Me: I am.. She's my fucken Daughter!!

.

SNOWY

He looked at me with his hand full of peanuts..
Him: Sabby says that you are his Sister
Me: That I am
Him: I don't usually do such favours because I don't want to ruin my business
Me: I understand
Him: If I hire you then I have to hire everyone's Sister
Me: Please I really need this job
He laid back on his chair..
Him: If I do this, it must remain between us
Me: I understand
Him: I am doing this because you are pretty and also you are Sabby's Sister and Sabby is a very
special boy to me
Me: Thank you very much
Him: I will you to forge a matric certificate because I
need matric to hire you
Me: Yes I will do that
Him: Remember if you tell anyone about this I will sue you for deformation of character and
dragging the name of my restaurant into the mud
Me: I will be very discreet about this I promise
He looked at me for a while..
Him: I will introduce you to the staff
Me: Thank you

He stood up from his chair too and then we walked out of his office to the main dining hall. I saw Sabby talking to some guy who was with a cop and then he pointed at us..

Me: Shit!!!

Part 20

SNOWY

I was pacing up and down in the interrogation room thinking that this could not be happening, I just got a my job and it will send a very bad impression on Beula that I got arrested for credit card fraud. Buela didn't really know what I got arrested for, I met the Detective halfway before he could explain and mirandize me. It's an hour since I was put in here, an interrogation room is something I am used too I am no stranger to this at all..

The door opened and the Detective walked in, the whole room was smelling of a cigarette..

Him: Miss Nene please sit down

I sat down..

Him: Do you know how many years you are facing?

Me: I didn't still his card

Him: Did he give it to you to go and spend?

Me: Yes

Him: See it's this lies that will put you away for a very long time

Me: I didn't commit any crime, he gave me his card

Him: No he didn't

Me: Yes he did!

He balanced his elbows on the table with his index fingers resting on the sides of his nose..

Him: You cloned his card

Me: What?

Him: Sweetheart look he has his black card with him and the one you have is a clone, you probably got his pin when he was paying that time at the restaurant

Me: I didn't steal his card!!

Him: Then explain how you have his card with you or a clone

This was frustrating I didn't know that this Tshepiso guy was actually this bad..

Him: Tell the truth

Me: Are you on his payroll?

Him: Sorry?

Me: has he bribed you?

Him: I am the best Detective that this station has what makes you think I would accept bribery from someone? I care about my job more than anyone at this station and right now you not making the situation any better for you!

I exhaled..

Me: So what's going to happen now?

Him: if you plead guilty you might get 10-15 years if you plead not guilty and lose the case you are looking at 25 years

Me: What???

Him: There is another way

Me: What way is that?

Him: Ask Mr Thobekgale to drop the charges

Me: How will I even get hold of him?

Him: Actually he is here

Me: He is?

Him: Yes he is here writing down his statement on what happened.. Do you want to talk to him?

Me: I seriously don't know

Him: You just have to ask him to drop the charges

This is something that I have to do for the sake of Layla if I get locked up Okuhle and Layla are in trouble, Buda will come after them..

He got up from his chair and walked out..

I sat there thinking of how difficult code black is, he is full of himself and he will use this to his advantage..

I stood up when the door opened he walked in alone without the Detective. I was surprised to see him battered like that, he had something that looked like a gauze around his nose bridge..

He sat down and I did too. For a moment we kept quiet not knowing what to say to each other..

Him: You have something to say?

Me: How are you?

Him: You are not at liberty to ask me that what do you want?

Me: I am sorry for spending your money

(Silence)

Him: That's all

Me: Yes

He stood up and headed straight to the door..

Me: Wait

He stopped.. I stood up too..

Me: Please

He looked at me..

Him: You spent a lot of my money

Me: I know and I'm sorry

Him: Will sorry bring back my money?

Me: No but I'm I'll do anything.. Please I need to go back to my job and..

Him: You finally work at the La Buela restaurant?

Me: Yes

Him: Maybe we can work something out

Anything..

He put his hands in his pockets while looking at me from my lower body all up to my face..

Him: We can definitely work something out

He made his way to me, I really didn't think that he was one of those guys..

Him: The restaurant delivers my lunch right at the office, Sabata has been doing it for a very long time but now I want you to do it

I waited for him to continue but he didn't..

Me: That's all?

Him: Yes that's all

Me: Ohw

Him: What where you expecting?

Me: Nothing I mean.. I was expecting nothing

Him: guess I'll be seeing you delivering my lunch then starting from tomorrow

Me: I will

He walked away..

Something is not right..That was way too easy. This guy is very unpredictable I wonder what's on his agenda..

.

.

KRESI

Shadow was busy playing around with the artificial flowers as I tried to see if the deco was going as how the bride wanted it to be. Tomorrow night they having a rehearsal dinner for both families, so the dinning hall has to be at it's best and cater for at least 30 guests..

Me: Hun please don't touch the roses and get off the table you going to mess up the table cloth

He got down. When I reprimand him on one thing he starts on something else..

Me: Shadow

Him: Sorry

Me: Keep your hands to yourself

I continued with what I was doing..

Me: Don't you have something to do?

Him: I am here to help

Me: But you not even helping

He came closer..

Him: Let me see what's on the list

He got extremely close and lowered his hand to my butt squeezing it..

Me: Shadow!!!

He stepped away...

Him: I'm going out to smoke

He kissed me on my cheek and grabbed my ass again..

Me: Sh..

Him: Sorry I'm keeping my hands to myself.. I'll be back

He walked away.. I watched him as he approached the exit with a smile on myself, it's these little silly things he does that make our relationship fun. Shadow is very supportive when it comes to my business and I love that about him..

.

.

SNOWY

After code black had dropped the charges I made my way to the restaurant, The first that happened when I got there was to have Buela approach me..

Him: What was that about?

Me: Nothing just a little misunderstanding

Him: It better be... I don't want any problems here I run a serious business not a playground

Me: I understand and I apologize

The phone rang..

He picked it up..

Him: La Buela restaurant how may I help you?.. Yes... No problem.. Thank you

He put the phone down..

Him: Go stand by the door and welcome customers in

Me: Yes Sir

I did as I was told..

Me: Good afternoon and welcome to La Buela restaurant

Customer: Table for one please

Me: Table for one please follow me

This wasn't as hard as I thought it would be. You just have to act natural and approach customers with confidence..

Part 21

SHADOW

Me: I'm coming

I was preparing myself something to eat when I heard that knock. I left everything that I was doing on the counter and then went to open..

It was Jerry..

Him: Are you busy?

Me: No you can come in

He walked in..

Me: I am preparing myself something to eat want some?

Him: I'm fine

He took out the envelope and handed it to me..

Him: This is her

Jerry works for me so I asked him to track down my Daughter and then take pictures of her since Snowy is fucking with me..

Him: Her name is Layla and she lives with her Grandmother and great grandmother

I opened the envelope and took out the pictures then looked at them..

Me: She's beautiful

Him: She's very beautiful

Me: I thought she was raised by Snowy

Him: No.. I don't even think Snowy is in her life I have records here proving that she was raised by her Grandmother

Me: That's news to me so my Daughter never had both parents in her life

Him: If I may confirm.. Is she really your Daughter? Because you have been hinting that Snowy was seeing someone else the same time that she was seeing you

Me: That's what we need to find out

Him: What's the next step?

Me: Paternity test

Him: How are we going to do it?

Me: I'm still thinking.. We can't kidnap her I don't wanna put her through that terror

I looked at him..

Me: Can you find a way to get her blood or something without putting her in that position?

Him: I'll try

I put the pictures away..

Him: The business took a bad hit this month financially

Me: In what way?

Him: The Merchandise delayed

Me: How bad is it?

Him: 30%

Me: 30% is a lot

Him: I know and I'm sure that percent can be recovered

Me: I hope so because I have to take my lady to Cape Town

Him: How is everything going with you and her?

I looked at him..

Me: Since when is my relationship your business?

Him: Excuse my being forward..

He looked at the time..

Him: I probably should leave

Me: You should

He walked to the door..

.

.

SNOWY

Some jobs you look at them and tell yourself that they are easy but when you step in the shoes of the employees and work, it's not as easy as it looks. The only thing I like about the job is that we get a lot of tips and all of them are no lesser than R400, sometimes male clients would flirt a bit and give you more. The male clients here are very sophisticated business men and they dressed in flashy suits or formal wear. I haven't seen one in a Jean so far..

I went to stand behind the counter while taking off my heels, my feet were hurting me. I have made R1500 from tips alone today on my first day and I had only a few hours left before I knock off. This other waitress came to me, she's very sweet and has been helping me with a few things today, her name is Camila..

Her: Tired already?

Me: The heels are killing me

She laughed..

Her: You will get used to them

Sabby made his way to me..

Him: Snowy you don't have time to chat you have a delivery to make

Me: A delivery?

Him: Yeap.. Code black called to place and order and he wants you to deliver his food

Me: To his office?

Him: His flat or house

Me: Huh?

Him: Come on you don't have much time here is the address

I looked at the time and it was 19:00

.

.

TSHEPISO

My day was busy I had moved out of home and moved into a luxurious 2 bedroom flat, Gesh has been helping me move my things from my Father's house to the flat. Naledi and I we will be living here up until we find a suitable house for both of us..

Gesh: This is the last of your things

Me: Ta poi

Gesh: how much am I getting for everything I did today?

Me: You getting a meal from my favourite restaurant

His phone rang..

Him: Let me take this.. It's Nokhanya

He walked out to answer..

Naledi will be spending a night at Kresi's place I wonder how that is going..

.

.

KRESI

I was surprised to get a call from Naledi saying that she wanted to spend a night here I went to fetch her and now we were preparing dinner for just the two of us. It wasn't something complicated just roasted chicken, mash&gravy, and corn. Things were a bit awkward considering what happened to us..

Me: How is school going?

Her: It's okay

I looked at her..

Her: Anything you wanna talk about?

Her: Not really

I let her be..

Her: Well there is something

Me: Wanna talk about it?

Her: I have a boyfriend

Me: That's unexpected.. How old is he?

Her: 18 and doing grade 12

Me: I.. He is mature

Her: I know

Me: So for how long have you guys been dating?

Her: A month now

Me: I see

Her: I have already slept with him..

Me: You what?.. Naledi what if you fall pregnant? Did you guys even talk about being sexual active? Both of you are in exhausting and demanding grades

Her: Mom I really love him

Me: When you 18 you will realize that you now love someone else

Her: He is the one for me

Me: He is going to varsity next year do you really think he is going to wait for you? He will think that you are too young for him

Her: Thank you for being negative

Me: I am being negative? Let's wait for your Father to hear about this

Her: That's why I'm here I want you to talk to him because I want them to meet

Me: Naledi

Her: Please Mom

.

.

SNOWY

The car pulled over and I got out, I made my way to the security guards and told them I was here to make a delivery. They let me in and directed me to his flat while the driver waited for me.

These flats are beautiful and look very expensive, if the security guards didn't direct me I would be lost because they all look identical. I got to his block and took the elevator which dropped me off at his floor and then I went and searched for his flat..

I rang the bell and waited for him to open, he opened after a while..

Me: Good evening

He leaned on the door and looked at me..

Somehow I just like how he looks at me..

Me: Your dinner

I handed it to him and he took it..

Me: anything else?

He shook his head no..

Me: Good night

He watched me walk all the way to the elevator. I don't think I can ever get used to the kind of person that he is, his personality is very confusing...

Part 22

SNOWY

When I got home that night I found Okuhle in bed sleeping, I had no doubt that she had been sleeping for the whole day because that's what she does when she is depressed she shuts the whole world out. I didn't disturb her but I kept on checking on her regularly to make sure that she is okay..

I kept myself busy by cooking it was late to prepare food but I just wanted to stop myself from thinking a lot. My Father came back from work at around 21:00, he went and took a bath and then I dished up for him..

Him: I spoke to the Lawyer

Me: and?

Him: He says that you should at least be working for 3 months so that the judge can see that you are committed into changing your life

Me: That's all?

Him: The way in which you abandoned your Daughter might affect your having full custody of her and also if Buda is not living at your Grandmother's house then he poses no threat to Layla It was very disappointing to hear that..

Me: So that I don't stand a chance?

Him: You do if you can prove that you have changed and also that Layla is not safe at your Grandmother's place

Me: I might never get my Daughter back and my Sister is slowly dying inside and there's nothing I can do about it

Him: Snowy

Me: It's not your fault

I stood up and went to the kitchen to put my dish in the sink, I felt a pain piercing through my heart. I felt some warm sensation in my chest, and tears burning my eyes. My life seems to be better, but really is it? I wish I could've aborted Layla too then she wouldn't go through this whole ordeal..

.

.

TSHEPISO

Despite what my Doctor said about me not going to work for a while till I heal but I couldn't stay in the flat and do nothing the whole day I was going to go crazy, since I drank my pain killers I felt a bit fine. Carl came to see me with a business proposal, I called La Buela hotel to deliver breakfast for us. My hand picked waitress was even running late, she was supposed to deliver at 08:00am now it was 08:30.

Carl: So what do you think?

Me: You my home boy and you know I would do anything for you I got your back but this.. Carl you don't even have a qualification in anything

Him: If I didn't why would the university hire me?

Carl is a genius I would like to think that it's something in his genes, something he was born to be. If a certain career fascinates him he would forge a qualification and then apply only if the institution doesn't do much of a background check. He is rich today because of these things that he does he is a thug with brains, he used to bridge a bank system back in the days when he was in some crew..

Him: I don't understand why you shutting my idea out because you know very well that this drug could make your pharmaceutical company a lot of money

Me: The popular it gets that's when it will attract attention and the WHO will be on my neck

Him: There's nothing wrong with developing your own pill

Me: I know but if they do a background check on you and find that you don't have a qualification to be doing this my company is on the line we have lost enough money as it is

He kept quiet and tried to come up with a smart answer but he couldn't..

The door flung open and she walked in, she seemed to be in a bad mood..

Her: One chicken cheezo and a chicken mayo sandwich accompanied by drinks

She put everything on the table and looked at me..

Her: Anything else?

Me: No

She nodded and walked to the door but stopped and turned around..

Her: You know..

She looked at Carl..

Her: Sorry if you a client please act like you didn't hear this

She looked at me..

Her: You know Thobekgale it wouldn't kill you to say thank you!!!

She had this beautiful small voice but a bit annoying when she yells..

Her: I am even sure that you don't even know my name! My name is Minentle but they call me Snowy so next time you can say "Thank you snowy" considering the fact that you don't even tip me!!!

Carl went through the paper bag and took out his chicken Mayo sandwich..

Carl: Thank you Snowy

Her: You welcome Sir

I took my order and looked at it..

Me: There's cheese

Her: It's a Chicken Cheezo

Me: I know but they usually don't include the cheese in my order.. I am lactose intolerant
Her: Lacto.. What?
Carl: It means that he can't process dairy products without..
Me: I just don't eat cheese you will have to take it back and bring me another one
Her: No problem
She took it and went to scrap off the cheese in my small bin and then came back with it, she threw it on the table..
Her: Here without the cheese
I looked at Carl..
Me: Excuse me
I stood up and went to her, I grabbed her arm and dragged her out of the office still yelling..
I closed the door then we went to stand where my Assistant is supposed to be stationed..
Her: You don't just drag me like that wh..
Me: Snowy shut up!
Her: You don't tell me to shut up!! Do not shut m..
I grabbed her arm again and tightened my grip..
Me: You better shut up and this moment
Her: I..
Me: At this Instance
She kept quiet. I let her go and pulled the chair..
Me: Sit down and tell me what's wrong without yelling
I pulled the table and sat on it, she kept quiet for a long time and then she just broke down crying. She was putting me in a very difficult position..
I looked around..
Me: You are putting me in an awkward position
Her: My life is over Thobekgale
Me: Over?
She wiped her tears..
Her: I can't get my Daughter and if I don't get her my.. It's just a long story
Me: You have a Daughter?
She nodded..
Her: With some coloured criminal named Shadow and now he also wants her and..
Me: Wait what? You have a Daughter with Shadow?
Her: You know him?
Me: No I don't I thought you meant someone else
She wiped her tears again..
Me: What do you have to do to get your Daughter?
Her: The Judge has to see me as a fit Mother
Me: That's all?
She nodded..
I exhaled..
Me: I can help you get your Daughter
She looked at me with her eyes wide open..
Her: Really?
Me: If that's all then it won't be difficult to have the Ju..
She stood up from the chair and then came to hug me busy kissing me on my face..
Me: Sn..
Her: Thank you.. Thank you..
I don't know what happened but her lips landed on mine and we shared a kiss, she pulled out after a few seconds when her sanity returned..
Her: I'm..
I kissed her again and pulled her very close to me, she wrapped her hands around my neck.

.

KRESI

After dropping Naledi at school I didn't go straight to the bridal shop instead I drove to Tshepi's office so I can talk to him about what Naledi told me last night..

The elevator opened and I made my way to his office when I stumbled upon him sitting on the table with a girl right in front of him kissing, the kiss looked so passionate and intense. He was really grabbing that waist and pinning her closer to him I'm surprised she didn't gulp or lost her breath completely..

I turned around and headed straight to the elevator..

Part 23

KRESI

I didn't leave I sat in my car trying to process what I saw there and make sense of it. It cannot be a fling, I remember when we had a fling I once showed up at his workplace and he almost killed me, Tshepi would never allow a fling to visit him at work. She definitely doesn't work there, the assistant desk was empty and she wasn't wearing their uniform black and white. Instead she was wearing red & white. A black skinny Jean, red shirt, and black heels. That kiss was very intense, he was definitely enjoying her lips there way they were sharing each other's spit it was too intense and in all my years of being with Tshepiso Thobekgale he has never held me like that, nor kissed me like that. He treated me like a hoe that I was, he has never handled me with care. Though he was pressing her harder to him he would loosen his grip a little..

I felt tears stinging my the corner of my eyes, my vision got a bit blurry and I struggled to breath.. I never knew that he would find someone, I thought I was the only woman that could handle him but guess I was wrong..

.

.

TSHEPISO

We broke the kiss but still very much tied to each other. I could feel her warm breath hitting my lower lip and we wanted to go on but going on would lead to something else. The door of my office opened and Carl walked out, he was a bit shocked at what he saw..

Him: whoa!!

Snowy got my hands off her..

Her: I have to go

I didn't know what to say so I let her go..

Her: And wipe the.. Uhm you have lipstick on your

I wiped my lips..

She quickly walked to the elevator, Carl looked at me..

Him: And then?

Me: It's nothing

.

.

KRESI

My phone rang I checked who it was, it was Shadow.

I took it and answered..

Me: Hello?

Him: Hello?

Me: Sorry hun I'm busy

Him: Are you at the bridal shop?

Me: Not really I'm at some venue checking it out for a client

Him: Okay can we do lunch?

Me: I don't think today it will do

Him: Why not?

Me: I have a meeting with Naledi's coach

Him: Can't you postpone?

Me: No..

Him: I wanted to do lunch with you since I can't come to your place I don't want Naledi accusing me of things

Me: I understand..

I saw the girl coming out..

Me: Hun let me call you later

Him: Okay.. I love you

Me: I love you too

I threw my phone on the front seat and followed her..

.

.

SNOWY

I cannot believe what happened I didn't mean to kiss him but at the same time that kiss really felt good. I have kissed a lot of guys before but with Thobekgale it just took me to another level, I don't know why but something deep inside of me jumped when he wrapped his arms around my waist..

I got in at work I looked around and everyone was busy so I went to check if there was any free table and there wasn't, all the waitresses had attended to the tables..

I jumped a little when I felt someone touching me..

Camila: It's just me girl relax

I looked at her..

Her: Are you Okay?

I nodded repeatedly..

Me: I'm okay

She shook her head a little..

I cleared my throat..

Me: Are there any free tables?

Her: Uhm..

She looked around..

Her: I see someone walking in

I looked at the door and some lady walked in..

Me: I'll attend to her

I made my way to her..

Me: Good day Mam' and welcome to La Buena hotel, table for one?

She looked at me and said nothing I could tell from her eyes that she had been crying..

Me: Uhm table for one Mam?

She faked a smile..

Her: Yes please

Me: This way please follow me

She followed me while I searched for a free table..

Me: You are lucky

She sat down..

Me: Should I give you some time to check the menu?

She gave me that weird look again..

Her: You didn't tell me your name

I thought she would see the name tag..

Me: My name is Snowy

Her: I'll have a Coca-Cola lite Snowy

Me: Coming right up

I walked away to get her drink and she kept on looking at me couldn't take her eyes off me..

.
.

SHADOW

Kresi lied to me I had been following her and I saw that after dropping her Daughter at school she drove straight to her Ex husband's workplace. She walked out of the building looking all upset, she got into her car and remained there for a very long time until I called. After my call she drove straight to La Buela restaurant, she wasn't meeting Naledi's coach whatsoever. I felt something deep inside of me move, why would she lie about her whereabouts? Unless she has something to hide..

Part 24

SNOWY

I went home that night feeling a bit different and with a different attitude. That kiss ignited something deep inside of me, each time I think of him I find myself smiling like a retard. I can easily tell the type of man that he is by how he handled me during that kiss, he likes to be dominant and that I also picked it up from his personality..

I got home and it was quiet, I went to check on Okuhle in the bedroom and she was sleeping. I stood at the door with my arms folded and looked at her, I hate to see her in this state. I didn't know that her depression was this intense to a point where she just doesn't wanna get out of bed nor even talk to anyone..

I continued starrng at her until I noticed that something was wrong with her breathing. When someone is sleeping you can see and monitor their breathing but Okuhle looked like she was breathing and she wasn't moving either. I walked in to check up on her..

Me: Okuhle?

She didn't respond. I tried checking her pulse but I couldn't make out if I was feeling hers or mine because I was starting to get very scared. I placed my index finger close to her nose and her breathing was very very shallow. I started shaking her..

Me: Okuhle.. Okuhle..

She wasn't responsive, I took my phone and called my Father..

.
.

TSHEPISO

I was bored out of my mind, I tried to keep myself busy with work but it only made me sleepy. I took my phone and went to the balcony to call Carl..

Him: I saw you today

Me: Yeah that's before I needed a favour

Him: What Favour?

Me: I need a judge

Him: A judge?

Me: A friend wants full custody of their child so I need a judge

Him: Why don't you get one?

Me: I don't wanna bribe I wanna threaten

I walked back into the flat and went to my bedroom..

Him: It would be easier if you told me the whole story

I opened the wardrobe and took out an old hat "Fresh boyz"..

Me: I just need a judge

Him: Bribing is much easier don't you think?

Me: I told you I don't wanna bribe I wanna threaten

I put on the hat..

Him: I'll see what I can do

Me: I'll get more information and hala at you again

Him: Ayt dawg

Me: Ta

I hung up and looked at myself in the mirror sometimes you gotta get your old demons back to fight the devil. Fresh boyz was a brand I came up with when I was young or rather when I was still Tpee, as time went on and Naledi was born then I got married I just left all of that life to be a responsible someone and I also think that age caught up with me..

I heard the door opening and two voices arguing, was definitely Kresi and Naledi..

Kresi: Don't ever come to my house again!

Naledi: but what did I do? Today you have been in a very foul mood

Kresi: You have a very stinking attitude Naledi and I don't think you understand that I am your Mother!! I am not your friend

I have never seen Kresi this mad at Naledi before..

Me: What is going on?

Naledi walked straight to her room, I looked at Kresi.

Me: I thought you guys were going to spend more time together

She looked at me..

Her: I want you to stay away from me and I want her to stop visiting my house until she learns respect!!!

Me: Okay what did I do?

Her: Just stay away from me!!!!!! (shouting)

Me: Okay

She was very upset I don't even know why, she couldn't hold herself she started crying..

Me: But what did I do?

I went up to her..

Her: Please don't touch me.. Just stay away from me.. You never loved me or cared about me just leave me alone

Me: Where is all of that coming from? Is it Shadow?

She hit me with her purse..

Her: It's you!! You a parasite and go put on some damn shirt!

With that being said she turned and opened the door..

Her: You soo caught up in your own shit you can't even realize that your Daughter is no longer a virgin

Me: What?

Her: I..

Me: What did you just say?

Her: It's.. She's 16 Tshepi it's..

I went straight to her room..

Me: Naledi!!!!!!

Kresi: Tshepi wait!

.

.

SNOWY

My Father came as quick as he could so that we could rush Okuhle to the hospital, she had

overdosed on her sinus pills. I was scared, I was very scared. An overdose on pills should never be frowned upon it can have a harmful effect on vital organs..

My Dad put his hand around my shoulders..

Him: She's going to be okay

Thobekgale has to move fast before I lose both my Sister and my Daughter, they are my world and the only family that I have..

25

TSHEPISO

This whole situation with Naledi no longer a virgin pisses me off more than anything in this world. I confronted her about it last night and she denied, I don't know what's happening with her but she seems to be very comfortable with lying these days, she swore that she hasn't slept with anyone but I don't think Kresi would lie about such. She even denied having a boyfriend and I'm already having Carl look into that. I love my Daughter more than anything but now at this instance I felt like it would've been better having a Son..

I looked at the time and it was 07:00am she hasn't made her way into the kitchen, by 07:45 she is supposed to be at school. I put the bowl in the sink and called her Mother..

Kresi: Hey

Me: Have you spoken to Naledi after what happened last night?

Her: She's not taking my calls

Me: You better fix this shit because she has locked herself in the room

Her: I'll come over to talk her

Me: You better

I hope Kresi fixes this mess, she's going all out to prove to me that Naledi is better off not under her care. All this shit happened while she was still living with Kresi, Kresi has been busy chasing after a dick than to mind Naledi. My child is on the road to becoming like her Mother, I knew well that you cannot turn a hoe into a wife I don't know what I was thinking marrying Kresi and having a child with her.

.

SNOWY

I didn't sleep at all last night when we got back from the hospital. The Dr assured us that Okuhle was going to make it but even so I don't know how she is going to cope with all the depression that's overwhelming her..

Sabata: Morning babe

Me: Morning

Sabata: Sam told me about your Sister I'm deeply sorry

Me: Thank you

Him: You not going to eat breakfast?

Me: No I'm fine with coffee

Him: Sorry sweets.. Are you sure you wanna go to work today? I can talk to Buela

Me: I have to go to work.. I wanna keep busy then during lunchtime I'll go and see her

Him: Want me to come with?

Me: You can borrow me your car

Him: I'll do that during lunchtime

Me: Thank you

Him: Let's go then

My problems are bigger than me now I used to handle shit well but lately it seems like I can't handle anything..

.

.

KRESI

What I did last night has been eating me up, what kind of a Mother am I? My Daughter trusted me with this information and I know that Naledi's biggest fear is disappointing her Father..

Shadow: Your ex just needs to cool down and this shit will blow over, she's a teen and most teens fall victims to peer pressure

Me: She could've fallen pregnant Shadow

Him: But she didn't? Allow her to calm down and let him calm down too then they will talk about this

I put on my earrings..

Me: I have to go and talk to her

Him: Let her calm down

He came and hugged me from behind and gently started biting me on my neck..

Me: Shadow..

Him: Just one round

His hand moved to my breasts..

I got his hand off me and moved away from him..

Me: Sex can wait my Family needs me

Him: Your family? Is your ex included in that statement?

Me: My Daughter is my family so she needs me

I took my bag and walked out of the bedroom..

.

.

SNOWY

The first thing I did when I got to the restaurant was to get Thobekgale's order and then I went to deliver it at his office. The security around here is way too tight, I don't even know why I have to go through 5minutes of security just to get to his office. They really taking it too far..

He was not in his office but his phone and car keys were on the table meaning that he was around in the building. I put his breakfast on the table and just when I was about to walk out he made his way in..

Him: Good morning

Me: Morning

He was wearing a white shirt, black pants, and black shoes. His shoes could also fit well when he's wearing casual. The tightness of his shirt around his arms told me that he hits the gym a lot, I haven't really seen his upper body clearly until today. The few times I've seen him he always had on a jacket. The right sleeve of his shirt was rolled up a bit and I noticed his pretty expensive watch and a full tattoo which starts of from his wrist and it looked like it extended all the way up to his arm. Even that bruise on his nose bridge couldn't take away his cuteness..

Me: I made sure that they didn't include the cheese

He put down the bottle of Powerade on the table and looked at me..

Him: Thank you

I smiled a little..

Him: What?

Me: You said "Thank you"

Him: Was that a bad thing?

Me: I don't think so

We looked at each other for a while until I broke the eye contact..

Me: I have to go

I walked away and he gently grabbed my arm, I turned around and we faced each other. He let go and cleared his throat..

Him: I.. I need you to give me more information about that situation with your Daughter

Me: Uhm yes I.. I don't know if you going to come to the restaurant tonight and I can brief you from there

Him: How about I just take you out for dinner then we can talk

Me: Ohw uhm..

He looked at me..

Me: Errr...

He extended his hand to my face and slightly rubbed his thumb against my cheek as if like he was removing a smudge, that small touch sent shivers down my spine..

Me: Dinner wi..

He got like extremely close and then leaned over, I thought we were going to kiss but he went for my cheek. I felt the warmth of his tongue against my cheek, and his strong arm slightly squeezing my waist. He let go of me and rubbed his thumb again on my cheek were he had kissed me..

Him: That's much better

He retracted both his hands and put them in his pockets, he just kissed my cheek that had a foundation on and he is not even spitting it out, okay he is getting more and more unpredictable..

Him: So what do you say?

Me: What do..

He chuckled..

Me: Sorry what was that?

Him: Dinner tonight?

Me: Yes why not

Him: I should pick you up at what time?

Me: I knock off at 19:00

Him: I should get you from work?

Me: Uhm yes you can

Him: 19:00 it is then

Me: Okay

He looked at the door indicating that I should leave..

Me: I should get going

Him: You should

Me: Bye

Him: Bye

I walked out of there feeling a bit dizzy, I literally had my hand on my chest and trying to breath. The elevator opened and in my dizzy state I bumped into someone I only noticed after bumping into her that she was the lady from the restaurant yesterday, my customer..

We looked at each other..

Her: You don't look where you going?

Me: I think we are both at fault, we both bumped into each other

Her: You bumped into me!

Me: We bumped into each other

Her: Do you even know who I am?

I laughed and pushed her off my way a little..

Me: Lady get out of my way please

I got in the elevator still laughing and shaking my head while looking at her..

26

SNOWY

During lunch time I went to visit my Sister at the hospital I was relieved to see her awake. She was still weak, and she constantly complained that she has a bad taste in her mouth and that she was feeling light headed. I happened to have brought her fruits and some 100% fruit juice so that she can at least pick up her strength..

Me: Okuhle you scared us a lot

Her: I'm sorry

I wasn't even going to bother asking what happened, I didn't wanna tire her more and more with obvious questions. Between the two of us and as much as It pains me to say this but Okuhle has always been the weakest, if she breaks she breaks. When something makes her sad she will dwell on it and think about it a lot until it depresses her then she will shut down..

Me: I just want you to get better

Her: I know I will

My phone rang it was Fufu..

Me: Let me take this

I walked out of her ward to go and answer..

Me: Hello

Her: Stranger

Me: Hey Fu how are you?

Her: I'm good and you?

Me: I'm fine

Her: Should I come visit this weekend?

Me: Yes please do

Her: How is everything going?

Me: Everything is well can't complain

Her: That's good.. Ohw guess who came to look for you?

Me: Who?

Her: Khayone

Me: You lie

Her: He came several times said he is going to call you

Me: What does he want?

Her: Ah ah ah Snowy how can you say that? You know little Boy has always had a thing for you

Me: Well unfortunately he is not man enough for me

She laughed..

Her: And what is your type? Who is Man enough for you?

Me: Where can I start?

I immediately thought of Thobekgale..

Me: That's a story for another day

Her: Let me go I have a car to wash

Me: Okay I'll call you later

Her: You better

She hung up and I went inside..

.

.

KRESI

I walked into his office he was sitting on the table with his one leg touching the floor and another one dangling around. He was looking at some documents while whistling, I stood at the door and looked at him.

Once upon a time I was married to this Person, he was my worst mistake and also my greatest blessing. I can't really describe the feeling but Tshepiso can have an everlasting effect on a woman. You fall in love with him, his demons and all that he comes with. He is very arrogant, he can make you like that part of him and hate it too..

I was so lost deep in my thoughts of him that I didn't realize he was looking at me. I snapped out of it and made my way in..

Me: Good morning

Him: Morning

Me: I am here to fetch the keys because I know very well that she won't open for me

Him: If you called I would've told you that I didn't lock

Me: How would I have known that?

Him: If only you called I would've told you

It hurt deeply to know that he has moved on. I don't know why but I enjoyed knowing that there wasn't any woman who can handle him, I thought I was the only one tailored for him. I enjoyed the attention he gave me, always begging me and now he might be falling for someone else. He might love her dearly and treat her better than how he used to treat me which is unfair, it is very unfair. He damaged me, emotionally killed me and I'm supposed to take all of that and move on? How fair is that?

Me: I'll leave then

He didn't say anything, he went back to his documents. I looked at him again..

Me: Do you love me?

His eyes moved away from the papers to my face..

Him: What?

Me: Do you love me?

He put the papers away and rubbed his eyes careful enough as to not touch his nose bridge..

Him: Okay what's going on with you?

Me: I just asked a simple question

Him: I'm asking one too

Me: Have you moved on?

Him: What makes you think that I have moved on?

Me: I am just asking

Him: Kresi I have a lot of work to do

I didn't wanna come straight at him but he was leaving me no choice..

Me: I saw her.. Actually I saw you guys kissing the other day and I saw her again today

Him: Wtf? Are you keeping tabs on me now?

Me: Really?

Him: Who I kiss and who I hook up with is none of your business

I kept quiet..

Him: Dammit Kresi don't do this!!.. Aren't you happy with Shadow? Weren't you the one always pressuring me that you want a divorce?

Me: You abused me!

Him: Because you made it easy for me to do so!

Me: Wow

I turned and walked away, he didn't even try to stop me..

.
.

SHADOW

I saw Snowy approaching the parking lot I was standing next to the car that she was driving, she saw me and wanted to turn but she couldn't. At the end of the day she has to come and claim the car..

Her: Shadow?

I looked at her and she still had it, beautiful as always.

Her: How did you find me?

Me: Snowy come on now

Her: What do you want?

Me: I want to know what's happening with my Daughter

Her: I told you that she is not your Daughter

Me: Then let me do a paternity test!

Her: Are you insane?

Me: I can't do that because apparently you not raising her!!!

She remained quiet..

Me: Just give me my Daughter I have someone who can raise her!

Her: You really think that I would allow you to see her?

Me: That's not up to you to decide is it now? It's up to Granny and Mommy

Her: They would never give you her

Me: Do you think I fucken give a damn about them giving me her or not? Do you think I fucken need permission from them?

Her: Shadow stay away from my Daughter please!

Me: Get me my Daughter! I wanna see my Daughter! Don't make me go get her from your house!

.

TSHEPISO

I received a call from Carl..

Me: Carl

Him: I found a Judge that we can use

Me: Yeah?

Him: Married with 3 Daughters

Me: So what's the situation?

Him: I don't know you figure that one out and know that I'm staying away from this

Me: Just send me his details

Him: Already Emailed them to you

Me: Ayt Dawg thank you

Him: Ohw by the way I also Emailed you the information about the child.. I got her file

Me: That's impressive

Him: Had to do it before you ask

Me: Ta poi I really appreciate it

Him: Bye

Maybe I might not have to get through the judge after all, maybe I can have a word with the legal Guardian of the child

27

SNOWY

He stood there next to his Mustang with his arms folded. He wasn't wearing a suit, he was wearing all black except for his brown boots. He even had a hat on to match his casual wear, and his tank top revealed his strong arms together with his tattoos. I checked the time it was 19:05, I had completely forgotten about our date..

Him: And here she comes

I gave him a shallow smile, I was dead tired..

He kissed me on my cheek the nice smell of his shower gel stuck in my nose..

Him: Looks like you had a long day

Me: You have no idea

Him: Tell you what.. Why don't we just go to my place instead of going out, you can have a warm bubble bath while I prepare dinner for you

Me: Trying to get me in your bed already?

Him: Would that be a bad thing?

I smiled..

Me: I don't know

He pulled me to him and gave me a hug, intoxicating me with his nice smell..

He just hugged me very tight and didn't say anything. That's what I needed the most, a hug to make me forget about what has been happening..

Him: Ready to go?

Me: I'll have to fetch a few things from my place, toiletries and clean clothes

Him: We can pass there

He squeezed my cheek and I blushed a little..

Him: Let's go

.
.
KRESI

Naledi can be dramatic at times that it can annoy you. Ever since I got into the flat she has been locked inside her bedroom and not wanting to come out. My phone beeped and I checked, it was a text from Tshepi..

"Naledi can spend a night at your place"

I tried calling him but he didn't pick up..

I knew exactly what that implied, it meant that he was bringing her here..

Naledi finally came out of hiding she made her way into the kitchen, she wanted to turn back when she saw me..

Me: Naledi

She rolled her eyes at me..

Me: Pack a few things you sleeping over at my place

Her: I don't want

Me: Yeah you don't have a choice.. Daddy is bringing a woman over

She looked at me shocked..

Her: What?

I know what I'm doing is petty but I cannot always be the only " bad" parent to Naledi..

Her: Are you making this up?

I showed her the text..

Me: Looks like you won't be the only girl in his life anymore.. Already Daddy is sidelining and making you his second best it's only going to get worse from here

I could see that she was breaking a little..

.
.
SNOWY

I searched my bag and I couldn't find my keys. Lucky I saw my Dad's car outside so I knocked because the door was locked. Thobekgale was standing next to me..

My Dad opened for us after a few minutes of standing there..

Me: I forgot my key

He looked at me and then at Thobekgale, we made our way in..

Dad: In my house you take off your hat

Thobekgale took off his hat..

Me: Dad meet Thobekgale, Thobekgale this is my Father

Thobekgale extended his hand to my Dad and my Dad just looked at it. I didn't understand why he was doing this because it's too late for him to play the overprotective Dad..

Me: I will be spending a night at his house he is going to help me with the Layla case

He just looked at Thobekgale and said nothing...

Thobekgale: I'll wait in the car

He walked out..

I looked at my Dad..

Dad: He was being disrespectful walking into my house with a hat on

Me: I'll go pack a bag

Dad: How do you know Thobekgale?

Me: What do you mean?

Dad: I read about him and his family in the papers

Me: I met him at work

Dad: For how long h..

Me: Dad please..

Him: Sorry

He walked out and I continued packing..

.

.

TSHEPISO

"I know that you are mad and I'm sorry. I thought that you and I were also friends. I am very saddened that I have to spend a night at Mom's place because you bringing a lady over, both my Parents are now neglecting me for other people and I don't know why. Things were better when you and Mom were still married because we all lived in the same house, I feel like killing myself, I am very hurt Daddy"

I called her immediately after receiving that WhatsApp but she didn't pick up, I called Kresi too and she didn't pick up also..

Snowy opened the door and got in with her bag..

Her: We can go

Now I'm torn between two worlds, driving to the flat with Snowy or driving to Kresi's place to sort this mess out. All I wanna know is how Naledi knew that I was bringing someone over.

28

SNOWY

I looked at him and he seemed down ever since he went outside to make that phone call. He was supposed to cook for me but he didn't, all he did was sit on the couch and watch the news channel. I closed the pot and went to him, I put my arms around his neck. I hugged from behind and kissed him on the cheek..

Me: What's wrong?

Him: It's nothing

He kissed me..

Me: I must be stupid then

Him: Come here

I went all around and sat ontop of his lap..

Me: You were supposed to cook dinner for me remember?

Him: I know

He planted a wet kiss on my cheek..

Him: Just having problems with my Daughter

Me: How old is she?

Him: 16

Me: Her room is pretty

He exhaled and gently squeezed my thigh..

Him: She is a handful

Me: Teens are a handful

He gave me a shallow smile..

Him: You know I have never met someone like you

I put my arms around his neck..

Me: I've never met someone like you either

We kissed..

This time around the kiss went further, before I knew it he took off my tshirt. I have had sex before and it never bothered me that much who I was sleeping with as long as I get money at the end, but this time. This time around it was different. Though Thobekgale long showed signs of being dominant he wasn't completely treating me like a hoe like some of the guys I've been with.

He was in charge but also handled me with care.

I stopped him when things were getting steamy, there's a part of me that I am very insecure about and that is my cookie. I wouldn't say it has been damaged but the appearance always gives people the wrong impression of me. Buda long took away it's beauty what's left is what I always get insulted on..

Him: What? What's wrong?

I was completely ontop of him with my legs on the sides and his hands on my waist. I could feel that he was hard..

Me: I don't think we can do this

Him: What?

I tried getting off but he pinned me against him..

Him: Come on Nono you can't do this to me

Amazing how they become all sweet when they wanna hit that..

I got his hands off me and I got off him..

Him: What's wrong?

Me: Thobekgale we don't even know each other that well too.. I mean we..

He stood up and came to me..

He started kissing me on my neck..

Me: We..

He made me a little bit dizzy and I found myself giving in mind you I haven't had sex in a while.

He picked me up and put me on the couch, He got my shorts off and my heart started beating way too fast. He got my lace underwear off and I put my hand on my cookie trying to hide it..

Him: Ganti Keng? (what's wrong)

He slowly removed my hand and parted my legs then as soon as he saw it, he had that look. I knew that shit wasn't going to end well..

He got up from the couch, I got up too and dressed up..

He had his back facing me and I didn't know what to say..

Me: Tho..

Him: How many guys have you slept with?

Me: You don't understand

He turned around and looked at me, I saw the devil in his eyes..

Him: I don't understand what? I don't understand what? That you forgot to tell me that you are a whore? What were you being before, a prostitute? Is this why you have been coming at me because you tired of that life now you want a rich guy to settle you down?

I lost it and slapped him across the face, He pushed me hard and I fell on the couch. I got up..

Me: I'm leaving

I tried walking away but he threw me down on the floor, I crawled my way to the main door but he grabbed my leg. I turned and kicked him with the other leg to loosen the grip and he let go. I got up and ran to the counter, If I didn't act now he was going to kill me. I grabbed one of the knives and when I turned it went in on his left breast, I let go as he looked at it..

.

.

KRESI

I opened the door and went inside, I closed it when I was sitting in a comfortable position..

A few seconds passed without us saying anything..

Shadow: There's something that I don't understand

Shadow is not allowed in my house when Naledi is around so we do it the old school way, chill in his car for a while outside..

Him: I feel like I am being made a fool here

I understand how he feels, I have been neglecting and lying to him..

Him: What exactly is happening between you and your ex? One moment you speaking ill about him the next you lying and sneaking to see him

I looked at him..

Me: How do you know that? Have you been following me?

Him: Following you? Why would I follow you if there's nothing wrong that you doing?

Me: Ohh my goodness!! That's creepy

Him: Don't raised your voice at me

I opened the door..

Him: Kresi

I got out and walked to the gate..

Him: Kresi!!

I turned and looked at him..

Me: Stay away from me!!!!!!

I opened the gate and walked in..

.

.

SNOWY

I got scared.. I got really scared that I rushed out of there and went downstairs to alert the security guards to call the Ambulance, when they went to check on him I ran out of the complex. I didn't know where I was going, I had no shoes on but I ran..

I didn't bother to see how Thobekgale was holding up, after I saw him going down I made a run for it..

29

SNOWY

"other girls their clits are so shy that you can't even see them, but yours is popping out and being out there greeting every dick to show that you are a hoe"

"When you open your legs your vaginal lips and your bean aren't appeasing to look at I can just imagine how my dick will be swimming in there"

"Yerr uyitiya sies!"

I was very young when Buda penetrated me for the first time and he was really big, I remember how I was bleeding and how I couldn't even hold my urine. When Buda was finally arrested and I had to be examined Doctor told me that the lengthy period of the sexual abuse will affect me when I wanna have kids one day, my womb was also affected in the process but as time went on I was shocked to see myself falling pregnant. The brutality that I endured from Men who just look at how stretched my clit is and how my labia is has made me to be very insecure about my cookies. I ran away from home when I was 16 and to survive in the streets I had to give myself to different men with different sizes, so when I have an encounter with a guy who just goes in easily and slips out easily it makes me to be judged again. I can say from the age of 8 thus far I have slept with over a 100 guys, I am even grateful that I'm Hiv negative by now I should have long died. At some point it didn't affect me how guys perceived me, when they judged me that I'm a hoe and everything I killed that part of my emotions to survive the swearing and everything else but tonight when Thobekgale did this it killed me. He truly hurt me and for him to act up on a first glance it goes to show me that he has had an encounter with a prostitute or something. I don't know why it hurt so much because I'm not a person who easily shows emotions that make me vulnerable, or is it because I was somehow starting to fall for him but what he did hurt a lot. What guys don't understand is that a clitoris cannot look the same way as how it was when we were 5 or so, it's a sexual organ it develops with time whether a woman is sexually active with different or not. It differs from women and just because my vaginal lips cannot fully close mine doesn't make me a lose woman, doesn't mean I don't respect myself. There more I thought about this the more I hated Buda he is the one who made me this way when he took advantage of me..

I was at Engen garage, I was waiting for Sabbie. The guys who had clocked in for nightshift were very sweet, they were even borrowed me a jacket to keep warm. Sabbie finally showed up and

he was worried because I was crying when we spoke over the phone. He hugged me and I let it all out..

Him: Babes what happened?

I looked around..

Him: Okay let's go and talk in the car

I was still walking barefooted I had left everything in his flat including my phone..

We got into the car and I wiped my tears..

Me: He said things Sabbie that weren't good

Him: Things like what?

Me: He made me feel like I was a trained trash hoe (Crying)

Him: Snowy I am lost

Me: I didn't ask for all of this.. One man showed me cruelty and now every man is judging me for things I had no control over..

He rubbed his hand on my back..

Him: Phephisa sisi

Me: I hate Men with all my heart and right now I hate Thobekgale with passion

Him: My goodness! Where code black is involved everything becomes a mess! If I knew I would've told you to staying away from him. Tshepiso Thobekgale has a heart of a lion. He is heartless and cruel

I wish I knew that then..

KRESI

I had received a call from Vic that Tshepi is at the Hospital. He had been stabbed apparently. I really don't know how I drove from my house to the hospital because I was stressed, Naledi couldn't stop crying in the car..

Vic was already at the hospital when we got there, Naledi went and hugged him..

Me: Vic what happened?

Vic looked at his girlfriend..

Gf: Naledi let's go and get something to drink

Naledi: I want to see my Father

Vic: You will sweetheart the Doctors are still busy with him

Siphokazi held Naledi's hand and they went..

Vic: The security guards at the complex told me that he was stabbed by some girl they assume it's her girlfriend or something and that a fight had erupted between them. She stabbed him to defend herself so they said

I sighed..

Vic: Kresi she almost stabbed him in the heart, the knife missed his heart just by a few inches..

We could've lost him

Me: Ohh my word

Vic: I am going to find that girl and she is going to pay for this

Me: He has been messing with some girl lately they even engage in intercourse in his office

Vic: Dammit he is messing with another Prostitute!!.. No offense

Me: None taken

Him: Let me call Nissi she has to know about this

He walked away..

.

SHADOW

I looked at him and he was bleeding from his mouth as the boys held him. His vest was reaped and he looked like a mess..

Me: Kill him

The boys looked at me..

Me: Kill him!

Kresi has pissed me to the car my blood was boiling and I just wanted to hurt and kill anything that I find in my way..

I went and washed the blood from my hand..

.

.

KRESI

We waited and waited until the Dr finally came to us, we all stood up. The surgery took long. He stood in front of us with his scrubs and looked at us, our hearts were beating very fast..

Dr: He is stable

We all sighed in relief..

Naledi: Can I see him

Dr: Not tonight maybe tomorrow

Vic: The surgery was long

Dr: His body completely went into shock, he could've died not from the stab but from shock

Vic: Can we open a case?

Dr: We have to wait for him to gain a bit of strength so we can know what happened

He looked at the time..

Him: I have to go

Vic: Thank you Dr

At least he is going to be Okay

30

TSHEPISO

3 DAYS LATER

There way that I hate hospitals I asked the Dr to discharge me and I'll get myself a Nurse that will take care of me at home, I really didn't wanna be here. I was still in a lot of pain I tried acting strong but Snowy really did a number on me. What happened that night is something that I'm not proud off, I shouldn't have said those words but after I saw that it was as if like I was watching Porno, those flaps, that clit took me back. I had found myself another whore, Another retired prostitute that wanted to use me cause now she was done with that life. One thing I have learned is that you cannot turn a hoe into a wife. I was already stressed out and pissed with the Naledi Issue, so Snowy was at that moment the only person I could take out my frustrations on. I was sitting up straight with my tablet busy checking what's happening in the world, checking out all the news channels when the boys walked in..

Gesh: Poi!! Man I thought you were dead

Me: That would satisfy you right?

He laughed..

Carl: Eyy.. How are you feeling?

Me: Still a bit weak and what not but I'll get better

Gesh: What happened Dawg? Kresi said you got stabbed by some bitch you was fucking?

Me: Kresi always has her stories twisted

Carl: Then who stabbed you?

Me: It was a woman but we wasn't fucking

I looked at Carl..

Me: That girl from my office

Carl: The waitress?

Me: Yeah

Carl: She's hood like that?

Gesh: How did you not defend yourself?

Me: It was very quick and she caught me out of guard

Carl: What happened?

Me: She was at my place we were about to get it down and then..

Carl: Then?

Me: I take off her shorts and her underwear, it's Porno written all over

Gesh: Huh?

Me: You know man when you watching Porn those bitches their pussies ain't really appeasing, the flaps, clit and everything

Gesh: I don't understand where you expecting a Virgin?

Carl laughed..

Me: Tell this fool what I'm talking about.. You know what it is man you once dated Sammy

Carl: I don't know what you talking about man all I know is that she was always good and she made me wanna fuck her even when we were in public, she used to squirt, she used to ride me like.. I don't know what the hack you on about

Gesh: When I get home I have to check my woman's pussy man..

Carl started laughing..

Gesh: I should really check her out I me..

Me: This is not a joke

Gesh: It is a joke! She should've killed you how you go and do that to a woman?

Carl: and she is so damn fine!!! Short with a beautiful body especially when she's wearing those very tight jeans, takes out her body shape perfectly.. She's pretty too those small lips and..

Me: Carl I know

Carl: I was talking to Gesh

Gesh: Look man as long as she's not sick doesn't matter what she did in her past I'm sure she's a better person now, she's not her past

Me: I just don't wanna wind up with another Kresi who will use me to better herself after she has had every dick out there and I must get the left overs of all the Men she fucked.. That's fucked up!

Gesh: How can she be like Kresi when she stabbed you?

I exhaled..

Carl: What if she wasn't even a prostitute?

Me: Trust me I know a prostitute when I see one

Gesh: So you done with this cheek?

I looked at them..

Me: I don't know

Gesh: I saw that.. Did you?

Carl: I saw it too

Me: Even if I wanna fix this I don't know how I've said some pretty bad things she probably won't forgive me

Gesh: You will have to crawl your way back to her

Carl: Naa this nigga right here has pride

Gesh: She stabbed you in the heart you know what means?

Carl: love I think?

Me: She is something else... She doesn't treat me like Tpee you know how them bitches would literally eat off my feet but her... Doesn't matter that I'm rich and well respected she doesn't care about that

Gesh: Are you falling in love?

Carl: I don't blame her you should see her, she knows how to put him in his place doesn't care who he is

Gesh: I have to meet her

Carl: You should

Me: I don't know.. I feel like I've messed this one up for good

Gesh: Naa if she feels the same way about you she will forgive you eventually

Carl: She is not Kresi.. She is the female version of Tpee, she is tailored for you. I saw yall that day together and yall can start something special

Gesh: She might be the one

They started

Carl: Yall yet got of here!!

.

.

SNOWY

I wiped my tears when Okuhle walked in, she was discharged yesterday..

Her: Morning

Me: Hey Babe

Her: Are you crying?

Me: No

She sat down opposite me..

Her: This got to you really bad didn't it?

Me: I'm fine

Her: No you not

I closed my eyes and opened them again..

Me: I don't why it still hurts, I have never really broken down like this or be emotionally miserable

Her: It's call love

I chuckled still wiping my tears..

Me: Love? I don't think so

Her: For it to hurt this much it means you were starting to feel something for him

I stood up and went to put my mug in the sink..

Me: Love?

I turned around..

Me: I have never loved anyone other than you, Layla, and my best friend Fufu.. I mean I have never even been in a relationship before

Her: We can't help who we fall inlove with.. Now personally I don't like him he is full of himself, arrogant, and thinks highly of himself! He might be handsome... He is very handsome but his personality is not right I read about him a lot

I laughed and shook my head..

Me: Love? You smoking weed

Her: You got the love bug

I threw the swab at her..

Me: You take that back

She laughed..

Me: I can't believe he did that.. I didn't expect him to be like one of those guys

Her: He is Tshepiso Thobekgale what did you want expect? There's nothing wrong with your Vjayjay I've seen you naked but because he is Tshepiso obviously he is going to find something wrong

Me: But it's not only him

Her: My clit protrudes too and I haven't had sex in a while, look we don't owe these guys award winning pussies!

I looked at the time..

Me: I have to go

Her: Are you sure about this?

Me: He is our last choice I mean after this.. Thobekgale won't help and I never wanna see her again

Her: I guess shadow is our last hope

Me: He is a lot of things but he has loved Layla ever since the plan is for him to help us get her then I will allow her to visit him on weekends

Her: I hope he comes through but let's not forget the fact that He is not Thobekgale he doesn't

have the money to bribe or have strong connections

Me: He is our last hope

She nodded..

Me: Let's go.. I'll drop you off at the therapist

Her: Let me go get dressed..

.

.

KRESI

I stood at the door and looked at him first before walking in. This is the Tpee I know, nothing can keep him down not even an almost fatal stabbing. Dr said he should be resting and recovering but not he is working..

Me: You should be resting

I walked in..

Me: I can see from here that you still in pain

He ran his hand on his chin while holding a pen. He was shirtless with a gauze attached to where he was stabbed..

Me: How are you feeling?

Him: I'll be fine

Me: Naledi is worried about you

He looked at his tablet..

Him: Why?

Me: Why what?

Him: Why are you using my Daughter against me because you intimidated by Snowy?

That came unexpectedly..

Me: Are you serious? She almost killed you what's there to be intimidated about? She is a ratchet ghetto girl

He slightly smiled and nodded..

Him: I think I might have fallen hard for her

I coughed..

Me: Sorry? What was that?

Him: I want you to respect that there's another woman in my life same way I accepted Shadow and stop influencing my Daughter against her.. Snowy is a very amazing person I want her and Naledi to get along, that cannot happen if you busy being like this

Me: She stabbed you and you think I want someone like that close to my Daughter?

Me: I do.. I hit her and this is the reason why I'm here now she was defending herself and I think I want that kind of person close to my Daughter because she will teach Naledi that she doesn't have to tolerate abuse

Me: What exactly are you saying?

Him: I'm not saying that what I did to you was right but you never really stood up for yourself why? Did you tolerate the abuse because you were comfortable with the benefits that our marriage brought you? You literally convinced my Daughter that it's okay to be abused as long as you get money and everything you want then you fine

I slapped him...

Me: How dare you??

Him: Get out!! I don't wanna hear any word from you unless it's about my Daughter

I walked up to the door..

Me: If she's the one

I turned around and looked at him..

Me: Why isn't she here? Has she even came to see you after injuring you? If she is all what you make her where is she?

He didn't say anything..

Me: Have a nice day!

31

SNOWY

I met up with Shadow at Kfc that morning before my shift so that we can talk about Layla. He is not the best choice in this situation but he is the only choice that I have, I do hope the he helps me I really need to get my Daughter..

Him: I couldn't believe my ears when I received your call

Me: I couldn't believe that you would be my last choice in this situation

Him: You look good by the way, what am I saying? You have always looked good

Me: Thank you

Him: What really happened between us? Ohw I got arrested and you turned into a hoe you slept with every dick that came your way

Me: Ohw

Him: I don't blame you I was gone for a while

Me: Can I ask you something?

Him: You can ask me anything

Me: What do you think about my.. Uhm.. My (Pause)

Him: Your what?

I looked at him and exhaled..

Me: Nothing

Him: What's wrong? I have never seen you this calm and humble.. I just insulted you a few seconds ago and you didn't pull your hair out

Me: There's 100% truth in what you said.. I did whore around

Him: You didn't have a choice.. You had no one to protect you from the streets, I failed you

Me: You didn't fail me Shadow

Him: I did.. If I didn't then you wouldn't have given up Layla

Me: Speaking of Layla

Him: Yes the main reason why we here

Me: My step Father is getting released soon we just don't know when, I know that he is going to seek revenge and he is going to use Layla to get to me because I put him behind jail

Him: So what's the plan?

Me: I don't know Shadow my Grandmother would never give me Layla and the Court I don't think they will take my side

Him: This is a very messed up situation the only way around this is to take your family out

Me: That would be stupid because then Layla would be put in a foster home

He leaned back on his chair..

Him: Then ill pay your Grandmother a visit

Me: Shadow for a moment don't think like a thug that you are we have to do this right, if we mess it up we might lose her forever

Him: I don't know what you expect me to do Snowy.. This is how I operate and this is how I intend on getting my Daughter back. I am a thug, I have always been one this is the only life I know until death do us apart

Me: Or jail

He picked up his coffee from the table..

Him: That's my second home remember

I exhaled..

Me: We screwed then.. Maybe Layla is better off without us

Him: Why you say that?

Me: A father for a thug and a Mother who abandoned her

Him: Don't talk like that... You have turned your life around, aren't you working at some fancy restaurant?

Me: I am but it's all going to be for nothing if I don't get my Daughter

Him: Hey we will work on that

He put his hand ontop of mine..

Him: Just trust me
I looked at his hand..

.
.

KRESI

My Receptionist opened the door and walked in..

Me: I'm coming

Her: I think you should go home

Me: Excuse me?

She looked at the bottle of wine..

Her: Dry red wine has a strong scent, the whole room is filled with it

Me: Excuse you?

Her: Sorry if I'm out of line Ms Thobekgale but..

I started laughing..

Her: Sorry did I say something funny?

Me: Yes you did.. You just called me Ms Thobekgale

Her: Isn't that your surname?

I got up from my chair and walked all the way around to partially place half of my butt on the desk..

Me: Let me warn you.. Never in your life marry a Thobekgale they are a drug, you will get hooked. As much as you get all the pleasure and excitement from it but they will destroy you
I took my wine glass and drank from it..

Me: Did Shadow call?

Her: No Mam'

Me: That's expected.. I drove him away because of a Thobekgale (Laughing) what the hell was I thinking?

Her: Should I call an Uber for you?

Me: For what?

Her: I think you need to go home

Me: I don't need to go home I'm fine

I gulped down the wine..

Me: Do we have a client?

Her: Err..

Me: I think we do

I walked up to the door..

Her: Ms Thobekgale I think th..

I opened the door and then walked out..

.
.

TSHEPISO

Me: How much is that going to cost?

Her: R500 000

Me: That's too much

Her: We slightly went over budget

Me: Slightly???

Girl2: Sir if I may speak..

Me: Who are you again?

Girl2: I am Sylvia head of..

Me: Who is handling this project?

Girl1: Well..

Me: Can someone contact me when they know what they doing? We can't just waste 500k

Girl1: Yes Sir

The Dr walked in, I closed the laptop..

Him: Are you working?
Me: I was on Skype with my Employees.. They handling an important project and needed me
Him: There's no one who can take over from you till you recover?
Me: I run my own company
He took my file..
Me: When am I getting out?
He gave me a weird look..
Him: You still recovering from surgery
Me: I'm fine
Him: Your body can go into shock again, you lost a lot of blood
Me: Look Doc I..
Him: You have tasted death a lot.. This is nothing I know
Me: I didn't die
He closed my file and put it down..
Him: Mr Thobekgale please respect my profession.. I might not be a millionaire but I went to school for 6 years and 3-4 Years of specializing so please
Me: I think I'll survive with pain killers
Him: That's what you think but it's more than that
We heard a knock at the door..
It was Braga the big dog..
Me: Braga?
He walked in..
Dr: Dr Cowen
Braga greeted him back..
The Dr looked at me..
Him: I'll be back
He walked out..
I looked at Braga..
Me: What are you doing here man?
Him: What you mean I came to check if your Ass is fine.. Heard you got stabbed came to check if you still breathing
Me: Yeah man it's a fucken mess
Him: "Many Men wish death upon me, Blood in my eye dog I can't see.. I'm trying to be what I'm destined to be, and niggas trying to take my life away"
I chuckled..
Me: I wish.. I wasn't stabbed by no nigga
Him: What you talking about?
Me: Some.. This chick she..
Him: Wait you got stabbed by a woman?
Me: It's fucked up I know
Him: Right close to your heart?
Me: Some like that
Him: I ain't got any words
He sat down..
Me: It's a messed up situation I know..
(Silence)
Me: I'm actually glad you here Man.. I need your help
Him: I ain't going after no female for your punk ass
Me: It's not that
Him: What is it?
Me: Can you.. Can you fake a rape report for a 5 year old little girl?
He whistled..

Me: I need to make some guardian seem negligence what better way than a rape case? Or signs of physical abuse? Can you help me?

32

SNOWY

I thought that I was never going to get over what Thobekgale put me through but a full month has passed and I have completely put what happened behind me. Since that day I stabbed him until now, we have never crossed paths and he doesn't order at the restaurant anymore. Life was finally peaceful..

Today it was my day off when Okuhle received a call from Layla's Preschool, we made our way there..

It wasn't only her teacher who was present in the room but also some social worker was present which got me a bit worried. Layla was playing outside with the other kids..

Teacher: Thank you for coming at short notice

Okuhle: It's okay.. You sounded a bit serious on the phone

She looked at us..

Her: I'm afraid it is a serious matter

Me: What's going on?

Teacher: These past few days I noticed bruises on Layla's body, last week she showed up with an almost broken arm

She passed us the pictures..

Her: At first I thought maybe she got those bruises from playing outside so I started monitoring her only to find that she comes with them from home

Okuhle: Ohh my word

She covered her mouth with her hands...

Teacher: I have asked her what happened she doesn't talk

Me: Was she examined for sexual abuse?

Teacher: Yes the Dr did and found none

That was a relief..

Teacher: I contacted social services and they went to Layla's home

The social worker cleared her throat..

S. Worker: We learned that Ms Nene is her legal guardian?

Okuhle: Yes she is

S. Worker: When we went to her house we found Ms Nene very drunk alone in the house with Layla

Okuhle: My Mother loved lives there.. Where was she?

She shrugged her shoulders..

Me: What's going to happen now

S. Worker: Well we wanted to take her into a foster home until her teacher told me that you have been looking after her

Okuhle nodded..

S. Worker: Do you have a stable home?

Okuhle: We..

Me: We live with my Father he has his own plumbing business, I work at a restaurant with my Step Brother. It's a stable home

Okuhle: I am going to register for a course soon but if Layla stays with us she won't be in need because three people in the house are working, and Snowy is Layla's biological Mother

S. Worker: Snowy is far from having full custody of her Daughter she should give it a few months so that the judge can see that she's getting her life back on track. It is a difficult case but Okuhle has the best chance of fostering Layla than Layla going into an Orphanage

Okuhle looked at me and I nodded..

S. Worker: I will talk to the Judge so that they can grant you temporary custody until the case

goes to court

Okuhle: When can we have her?

S. Worker: As soon as possible, tomorrow morning I will have to come and see the place then also speak to the people that you live with

Okuhle: That won't be a problem

Me: Where is she staying now?

S. Worker: Some children's shelter.. Don't worry she's safe

The teacher stood up..

Teacher: I have to check on the kids

Okuhle: Can I see her?

Teacher: Come with me

They both walked out..

S. Worker: Well I believe we are done here

Me: Thank you

She gave me a shallow smile..

Her: Don't flatter yourself this whole case is a set up your Grandmother is not negligent

Me: I don't understand

Her: You have friends in high places that's what I'm going to say.. I hope the child is going to be safe with you I don't wanna remove her from a stable home to an unstable home

She stood up and took her things..

Her: I will see you tomorrow morning

She walked out. I laid back on the chair and took my phone out, I called Shadow...

Him: Snowy

Me: Thank you very much

Him: For what?

Me: Don't be modest.. You know what I'm talking about, well I didn't get full custody of her

Okuhle will but she will be living with me and you will be able to visit her

Him: What are you talking about?

Me: I'm talking about you helping with the Layla case

Him: Ohh that.. I didn't do anything I was still trying to find a way, I didn't want things to get bloody Mary messy

Me: Wait you didn't do this?

Him: No I didn't..

"You have friends in high places"

Me: Dammit Thobekgale!!

Shadow: What?

Me: I have to go.. I'll call you

I hung up and stood up..

Me: I'll be damned!

.
.

SHADOW

That phone call was weird but if I heard right Snowy was talking about having custody of our Daughter, that was good news. Very good news..

Kresi: That smile...

Me: I just heard good news

Her: What is it?

Me: I don't wanna jinx it yet

Her: All done

Me: Thank you

Kresi and I we trying to make our relationship work, she came back and asked for forgiveness. I hope this time around she really focuses on us..

Me: I think soon you will meet my Daughter

Her: It's about time.. I can't wait
I picked her up..
Me: I know you can't wait
She wrapped her legs around my waist..

.
.

TSHEPISO

I was back at the office things have been tense. I am not 100% well but I'm getting there, I am taking it easy just as the Dr instructed..

Me: I don't know

Her: Well it has less side effects

Me: Vomiting as a side effect is intense

Her: It's actually nausea

Me: I don't wanna give our clients something that might harm their patients

Her: It's just an Analgesic for the relief of mild to moderate pain

Me: I don't know I'll think about it

Snowy walked in with securities following her..

Snowy: I said don't touch me!!!

I nodded and they let her go..

Me: It's okay guys

They walked out, I looked at the head Pharmacist..

Her: I guess we will do this some other time

Me: Thank you

She took her things and left, Snowy stood there next to the door with an attitude written all over her face. She still looked pretty, and that simple outfit she was wearing, was somehow sexy..

Her: How Dare you!!!

I stood up..

Her: How dare you?

I was dumbfounded..

Her: Friends in high places? I couldn't figure that out

She fixed her bag that was falling off from her shoulder..

Me: Layla?

Her: Wow you are impossible!

Me: I saw how important it was for you to have her back so I was only trying to help

She laughed...

Her: First of all Thobekgale I didn't... I wasn't after your money! Maybe my job seems useless to you but at least I am independent I can buy my own things. I didn't get close to you because of your money, your status and all of that! I actually felt something for you!

I let her continue talking..

Her: And I am not a hoe!!! You judged me before even knowing what happened!!!

I saw her eyes filling up with tears..

Her: I was sexually abused by my step father for a very long time, by the age of 8 he was already on top of me until I became a teen. He damaged me and I damaged myself more! He killed me, I died a long time ago and I don't usually cry because my pain is coded and resides deep inside of me until you came along

I made my way to her as she was breaking down..

Her: Don't get any close.. Just stay away from me!! Go to hell!!! I hate you and never wanna see you ever again. Go and be with women who meet your high standards! Ohh I know get one from here because they seem educated! I might be a hoe to you, but there is someone out there who will see me beyond that!!

She wiped her tears..

Her: Goodbye Thobekgale.. Have a nice life!

She walked out..

33

TSHEPISO

I felt like a complete fool I was mad at myself for thinking the obvious, I should know better than to judge first before knowing the truth. Just that after my experience with Kresi this time around I really wanted to date a normal woman, one that never subjected herself to exchange her body for money..

Naledi: Daddy it's your turn

My mind was far away..

Her: Daddy

I looked at her..

Her: It's your turn

I looked at the dice..

Me: You win Poonkie Pie

Her: Huh?

I got up from the floor..

Her: But you didn't even play

Me: Ya Daddy doesn't feel well

She got up too..

Her: Are you sick?

Me: Just work baby

Her: Is it a lot?

Me: Ya and a bit stressful

Her: You will get the hang of it

Me: I know I will

Her: Our pizza is late

Me: I am sure it will be here

The door bell rang..

Naledi: Speak of the devil

She went to open but it wasn't the pizza guy..

Morris: Hey Naledi

Naledi: Hi Uncle Morris

Him: That wasn't much of an enthusiastic greeting

Naledi: The pizza delivery guy is late

Him: Sorry Kiddo

He made his way in..

Me: Why don't you go and call the store?

Her: Fine I'll do that

She walked away..

Morris: Hey

Me: Do you have it?

He handed me the file..

Him: You should know that I went to a lot of trouble for this

I gave him a serious look and then opened the file..

Me: What am I looking at?

Him: Well she wasn't lying though she didn't mention that he was also doing time for murder

Me: Murder?

Him: Yeah murder.. He was supposed to do serious time but next week he will be out on Parole I kept quiet for a while and then closed the file..

Me: I want you to revoke his Parole.. Set him up if you have too I don't care but I don't want him

out!

He laughed..

Him: Tpee I am sure Buda knows the terms of his Parole, he wouldn't risk his freedom

Me: I don't think you understand me

Him: He is going to be harmless trust me!

Me: This is for him!

I hit him with the file on his chest..

Me: He is more safer in jail than he is outside

Him: What?

Me: If he gets released I am going to kill him and that is a Promise Detective!

Him: What did he do to you?

Me: He touched my heart

Him: I don't understand

Me: You wouldn't

The door bell rang again..

Me: I'll get that.. I'm sure it's Naledi's pizza

.

.

SNOWY

Okuhle and I were setting up the table, we had just finished cooking. Okuhle was so happy about having Layla come and live with us..

Okuhle: I will definitely wake up at 05:00am and start cleaning she has to find it clean

Me: She will give us Layla whether the house is clean or not

Her: You seem confident.. Is this Shadow's doing as planned?

Me: No...

Her: What is going on?

I kept quiet..

Her: Snowy?

Me: It's Thobekgale!

Her: What? As in like Tshepiso Thobekgale?

Me: I don't know what he did but he is the reason why we going to have Layla back

Her: Wow I.. I don't know what to say

I continued doing what I was doing..

Her: But that's a good thing right? That he helped us

Me: No Okuhle it's not! This guy disrespected me, degraded me and hurt me!!!

I hit the plate hard against the table that it broke..

Her: Okay calm down

Me: He did this because he looks down on me!

The door opened..

Dad: I am home

Okuhle: We are here

I picked up the broken pieces..

Dad: Something smells nice

Okuhle: We cooked

Dad: That's q first

Okuhle: What do you mean? We always cook

Dad: Not always

Okuhle: Anyway we are celebrating

Dad: Celebrating?

Okuhle: Layla is going to stay with us soon

Dad: Wow how did that happen?

Okuhle: Long story

Dad: You must be happy Snowy

Me: Excuse me.. I have to go and throw this out
I heard them talking as I walked away..

.
.

TSHEPISO

I couldn't sleep at all last night this thing with snowy kept on eating me up, I spent my night lifting weights my arm was even painful this morning..

Naledi walked into the kitchen..

Naledi: I am ready

Me: Naledi can I talk to you about something?

Her: It cannot wait until after school?

Me: No Baby it cannot wait

She sat down..

Me: Though sometimes you make me very angry but you know that Daddy loves you more than anything in this world right?

Her: I know

It was hard talking to Naledi about this..

Me: You will always come first that you should know

She nodded..

Me: Daddy has been.. I have been seeing someone a lady by the name of Snowy

Her: The one who stabbed you? Mommy said she stabbed you

I clenched my teeth..

Me: Mommy says a lot of Rub.. I mean your Mom doesn't really like this lady

Naledi: I don't like her too.. She almost killed you

Me: She was defending herself because I.. Look Naledi it still pisses me off that you already had sex at your age but because I love you I am learning to live with it, sometimes you have to learn to live with what you don't like to make the person you love happy

She kept quiet for a while..

Her: Do you love her?

Me: I.. I think I do

Her: More than you loved Mom?

Me: Yes more than I loved Mom

Her: Are you happy?

Me: I am

She smiled..

Her: Then I'm happy

Me: Come here

She got up from the chair and made my way to me, I hugged her..

Her: I hope you don't love her more than me

Me: That's insane.. You my life without you I'd die

Her: I love you daddy

Me: I love you too Poonkie pie

.
.

SNOWY

Okuhle must have woken up earlier than I expected because the house was already half way clean..

Her: Please don't touch there I have already cleaned

Me: Uhm where can I touch?

Her: Let me see

She looked around..

Her: Err... Nowhere

Me: Okuhle this crazy

Her: Snowy Buda is coming out soon we really need Layla here
Me: We will have Layla trust me
Her: Thobekgale must really have contacts in high places
Me: Yeah whatever
My phone rang... It was Khayone, it's funny that I didn't delete his number..
Me: Hey
Him: Hey you
Me: Hi
It was awkward.. We haven't spoken in a very long time and things didn't end well between us..
Him: I've been at your place and..
Me: I know Fufu told me.. I moved
Him: Ohh where?
Me: My Father's place and now I have a job
Him: Wow that's.. That's a big change
Me: I know
Him: I'm happy for you
Me: Thank you
Him: Well I just called to check up on you
Me: Thank you
Him: Bye
Me: Bye Khayone
I hung up..
I turned and looked at Okuhle..
Her: Who was that?
Me: Just an old boyfriend
She chuckled..
Me: What?
Her: It won't work
Me: Pardon?
Her: Snowy you are in love with someone else
Me: Ohw
Her: No matter how much you can try and deny it but you know deep down that you are in love with someone else, Yes Thobekgale hurt you but you also didn't give him time to explain himself. As much as you had an experience he also had one, you told him your side of the story.. Don't you think you should hear his too? He loves you Snowy
Me: How do you know that?
Her: He wouldn't have went through all this trouble if he didn't.. Now pass me the broom please I passed her the broom..
Her: Fix things with him I am sure being arrogant is part of who he is I mean you can't have such a fine rich Brother all sweet and what not, He is Thobekgale after all.. He comes from a very rich family don't expect him to act normal

34

SNOWY

I am not used to this type of work, it's already getting to me but then I need to keep up for the sake of Layla.

I went to my locker and surprisingly it was open, I knew very well that I had locked it after putting my bag inside. I checked through everything and everything seemed to be in order, or maybe I did forget to lock it..

After that unusual incident I went back to the main dining hall, it was starting to be a bit full. Most customers like our full house breakfast..

Sabby: Hey

Me: Hey stranger

Him: Don't say that

Me: I haven't seen you at home lately.. Where are you sleeping?

Him: Child you don't wanna know

I laughed..

Him: There goes a table for you

I looked around..

Him: Code black just walked in

I looked at the door and indeed it was him, he was with another guy. He was in casual wear, with his arrogant ass he still looked handsome. The hat he was wearing was hiding half of his face, his tank top revealed his strong arms. He really looked handsome I couldn't front, his friend looked good too. I didn't understand the colours though, Thobekgale had more black and his friend had more red with what looks like a red bandana around his wrist..

I gave them at least a minute or two to look at the menu..

Sabby: Gosh say whatever you wanna say about Code black but he is flames

I looked at him..

Him: I know that you are fighting with him for whatever reason but he is flames you cannot deny that

Me: Ohh sorry I didn't notice that.. I was too busy mad at him to notice that he is flames

Him: Pshhh pumpkin get over yourself!

Me: You should be defending me!

Him: Defend you on what exactly?

Me: That guy insult..

He rolled his eyes..

Me: It's like that now?

Him: Just go and take their order will you now?

I dragged my legs and made my way to their table, I stood before them and whatever jokes they were cracking seized..

Me: Good morning

The friend greeted me back..

Me: My name is Snowy and I will be taking your orders this morning

I stood there waiting for them to talk..

Friend: What do you recommend?

Me: Everything is on the menu Sir

Him: I know that but you work here you used to the menu so what do you recommend

Me: You can look at the menu

He turned and looked at Thobekgale, Thobekgale kept quiet..

I took out my small notepad..

Me: Mr Thobekgale what would you like to have?

Him: You not even looking at me

Me: I can hear you

Him: You have to look at me don't they teach you guys how to be friendly with your customers?

I put my notepad away and looked at him..

Me: May I take your order?

He took the menu and looked at it for a while..

Him: What is a frittata?

They both kept quiet and looked at me, I was a bit embarrassed..

Me: I am not sure I just started working here

Him: Today?

Me: A while back

Him: A while back you should already know the menu

He turned to his friend..

Thobekgale: Don't you think?
His friend nodded..
Me: Would you like to be served by someone else?
Him: Why would I wanna be served by someone else?
I kept quiet..
Him: I'll have the usual
Me: There's no dish called "The usual"
He put the menu down..
Friend: Aii just give us coffee
Me: Very well
I walked away to place their order..
Sabby: Coffee and what else?
Me: Only coffee
Sabby: We don't serve beverages only they have to order something
Me: Can't we make an exception? It's code black
Him: That's why we can't make an exception
I exhaled and went back to them..
Me: Uhm..
This was very embarrassing..
Thobekgale: You can't serve beverages only
Me: So you will have to order
Him: You did know that right?
I looked down while playing with my notepad and kept quiet..
Me: What do you want from me?
Him: Sorry?
Me: You here to embarrass me more? Make me look stupid in front of your friend? In front of my colleagues?
Him: What are you talking about?
Me: You know exactly what I'm talking about!!
I didn't even know that I had raised my voice at him..
Me: You know you have all the evil of this world embedded within you.. You are like The Pen..
Pa..
Him: Pandora's box?
Me: See what I mean?
Sabby: Excuse me is everything alright?
Thobekgale looked at me..
Him: Is everything alright Snowy?
Me: Excuse me..
I walked away..

.

OKUHLE

The social worker came with Layla, I thought she was going to come alone and see the house but she came with Layla and my heart melted..
I hugged her for a very long time..
Me: Hey you
I fixed her hair..
Me: Did you miss me?
She nodded..
Me: I missed you too
S. Worker: Where should I put her things?
Me: Come with me
We walked to the bedroom..

Me: Here
She put them on the bed..
Me: Uhm where would you like to see first?
Her: Nowhere
Me: But I thought that..
Her: It doesn't matter whether I see the house or not because either way you will get full custody
Me: Ohw
Her: You rich people make me sick!
Me: Sorry?
Her: No! Actually just because you know a few rich and high class people doesn't mean you can do what you want! We talking about a child's safety here, she is not a toy.. This is not a game Mam'
Me: Layla is more safer with me than she is at that house
Her: Is she?
Me: Is that all?
She looked at Layla..
Her: There's a few documents that you have to sign.. I'll get them in the car
That was very awkward...

.
.

TSHEPISO

Gesh: And then Manje wena?
Me: I just like playing with her
Gesh: That wasn't playing Dawg you made her upset
Me: She will be fine... So what do you think?
Gesh: Now I see why she stabbed you
Me: She's a tough one
Gesh: Her anger is overshadowing something
Me: I am trying to break through that
Gesh: You just did.. I think you made her cry
Me: I'll be right back
I stood up and made my way to the counter, she wiped her eyes..
I looked at her..
Her: Are you trying to get me fired?
Me: The problem is that you always think everyone is against you or out to get you.. I don't know the guy that hurt you but Snowy you cannot be angry at the whole world
Her eyes filled with tears..
Me: Okay I'm sorry maybe I acted like a jerk but you always on attack mode even when you not being attacked
She remained quiet..
Me: I guess you can give us the full house breakfast dish whatever shit hell it is
She laughed..
Me: I guess you know that one right?
She looked at me..
Her: Yes I know it
Me: I'll be sitting over there
Her: I know where you sitting
Me: With my friend
She was trying so hard not to smile or laugh..
Me: You bring us two o..
Her: Thobekgale just go okay?
Me: Okay I was just making sure you got the order right
Her: I did

Me: Okay

I walked back to the table..

Gesh: And?

I looked at her at the counter she was all blushing and shaking her head..

35

SNOWY

Today we were short staffed so I was asked to do a double shift for an extra money, I didn't complain because I needed the money even though halfway through the hours got to me. Sabby left an hour before, I think he is sleeping at Buela's place and my Father has been complaining that he has been gone for too long. Sabby doesn't really say when he's going, he just disappears..

I stood outside close to the door, I think the transport has already left so now what's left is for me to call my Dad to come and pick me up. I unzipped my bag and took out my phone, It was off which was very weird. Today it was very busy because it was Month end I hardly had time for my phone. I tried switching it on but it didn't, I tried a few times but still. I took out the back cover and my battery was not in. I didn't know what to think until it hit me that I saw earlier on that someone messed up with my locker, I checked everything else in my handbag and nothing seemed to be missing other than my phone battery. I looked around and it was a bit quiet, the shops close to our restaurant were closed. My heart started beating fast, I was alone didn't see any one walking. I could ask for a lift but with girls getting kidnapped lately it's not safe, I looked around again and there was no hope that I was getting home tonight. I started biting my nails..

Me: Come on Snowy think

I am in a state where I'm vulnerable to get raped and killed or kidnapped, I was out of ideas..

I hung my bag over my shoulder and started walking, I was really scared for the first time in a very long time. It was a bit windy and very dark. A few cars passed by, I wasn't walking fast I would walk and stop just to make sure that I'm not being followed. If only I could find someone who can borrow me their phone to call my Father or Okuhle to fetch me. I heard a car that played music very loud, I saw the headlights, heard the engine. It pulled up next to me, it was Thobekgale. I sent out a sigh of relief..

He turned off the music and came out of the car..

Him: Hey

I made my way to him..

He squeezed my cheek..

Him: You okay?

Me: Now that I see you I'm okay

Him: Waiting for someone to pick you up?

Me: Not exactly

He gave me the look..

Me: It's a long story

Him: So can I take you home?

Me: Please

We went to his car and he opened the door. He came with his Red mustang that had black stripes on the bonnet..

Me: How did you know that I was here?

Him: I tried calling but your phone was off, I went to your house and your Sister said you wasn't home

Me: Ya someone stole my battery at work

Him: What?

Me: Major disaster I know

His phone rang.. He looked at it, caller ID was

"My princess"

Him: I have to take this... It's my Daughter
He answered..
Him: Poonkie Pie.. I am somewhere... Now?.. Okay I'll be right there..
He hung up..
Him: Sorry do you mind if I pass by at the flat?
Me: Uhm.. You can drop me off first
Him: I am close to my flat than I am to your place.. Won't take long just two minutes
After what happened in his flat I would rather not go..
Me: Just two minutes?
Him: I promise
Me: Okay
I looked at his phone..
Me: Can I please call my Sister?
Him: Yeah sure
I took it and he unlocked then I called Okuhle..
A small voice answered..
Voice: Hello?
I kept quiet..
Voice: Hello?
I didn't know what to say..
Voice: Hello? Hello?
I heard Okuhle calling out at the background..
Okuhle: Who is that Gummy?
Layla: I don't know
After a few seconds Okuhle started speaking..
Her: Hello
I cleared my throat..
Me: Hey it's me
Her: Snowy?
Me: Yeah it's me I'm on my way home
Her: Is everything okay been trying to call you
Me: Ya everything is okay
Her: Alright shouldn't you have knocked off a long time ago?
Me: Long story
Her: Let me put Layla to bed
Me: Layla is there?
Her: Yes
Me: Uhm..
Her: You two have a lot of catching up to do
Me: I guess so
Her: See you then
Me: Bye
I put his phone away..
Him: I saw your Daughter.. She is very adorable
Me: You did?
Him: I did
I kept quiet.. I was nervous about meeting Layla..

.
.

KRESI

I was taken to receive a call from Nissi today saying that she is around, so at around 18:00 when I had closed the shop I drove to Vic's place to see her and I have been there ever since then. She looked pretty good, she had gained weight and was glowing..

We cooked dinner while catching up, she had come alone..
Me: So where is the Fiancé?
Her: Left him at home
Me: And your Son?
Her: Left him there too
Me: Really wanted to see him
Her: You will soon
Me: I hope so
Her: Reason why I am here is to give out wedding invitations
Me: No ways!! You and Shane?
Her: Yes
Me: Wow congratulations
I hugged her..
Her: Thank you
Me: He must be treating you good
Her: He is the best
Me: I can see that you even gaining weight
She laughed..
Me: I wish I had a happy ending too
Her: I'm sorry about the divorce
Me: I'll live
Her: You will get over him.. I know he has that effect
Me: I even feel stupid that I am still madly in love with him
Her: Tpee has that effect he is toxic but also he is a drug, he is not right for you but you just get more and more addicted
Me: How did you do it? How did you get over him?
Her: Took me a while but I almost lost my life because of him that's when I saw that he is not good for me.. Give it time you will get over him
Me: I hope so

.
.

SNOWY

We arrived at his flat, he closed the door behind me..
Him: It won't take long
His Daughter showed up..
She was a real beaut I can't front..
Her: Daddy I..
She paused when she saw me..
Thobekgale: Naledi I want you to meet someone
He walked up to her..
Him: This is Snowy, and Snowy this is my Daughter Naledi
Me and her looked at each other without saying anything..
Her: Err.. I think this is where you say "Hi Naledi"
Me: Why?
She looked puzzled..
Her: I am.. I am his Daughter the first woman in his life and..
I laughed..
Me: Well Sweetie I am Snowy and I don't give a flying colours if you are his princess, the first lady in his life trust me I don't care
She looked at her Father..
Me: You can look at him he won't say anything
Her: I don't think I like you
Me: You think I care?

Her: I..

Me: Pause.. I am older than you so going back and forth in an argument with you is really degrading my age. I am not here for you so you don't have to say any words to me.. Trust me! She wanted to say something but restrained herself..

Her: I'll be in my room doing my homework

Me: Good girl!

She walked away..

I looked at her Father..

Me: So when are..

He came to me and kissed me, just like that.. Out of the blue.

36

SNOWY

A few glasses of wine had me sitting on top of him again and helping him change the Gauze that was covering his wound. I felt a bit somehow after seeing that knowing very well that I almost killed him, if he didn't get help he was going to bleed to death. I almost robbed a young girl of her Father..

I felt him holding my wrist..

Him: Are you Okay?

I looked at him..

Me: I'm okay

Him: Talk to me what's wrong?

Me: I can't help but blame myself that.. What if I killed you?

Him: Don't ever think like that and don't blame yourself, it was either me or you

Me: What do you mean?

Him: I was very angry that night.. I could've seriously hurt you

Me: All because you thought I was a hoe?

He lifted my chin..

Him: How many glasses of that wine did you have?

Me: A few

Him: A few too many.. Maybe you should lie down

Me: I have to go home

Him: You cannot meet your Daughter in this state.. Remember we are trying to be a responsible parent? Incase social services is watching

Me: You probably right

Him: I know I am

I tried kissing him but he stopped me..

Me: I am not a hoe Tpee

Him: I know that but I don't wanna sleep with you in this state

Me: In which state?

Him: Drunk..

I laughed..

Me: I am not drunk

Him: Yeah right

He pat me a little on my thigh..

Him: Come on lie down and I'll call your Sister

Me: I am not drunk

Him: I know that

He stood up while my legs wrapped around his waist for dear life..

He tried to lay me on the bed but my I still had my legs around him..

Him: Snowy stop..

It was just so fun irritating him..

Him: Never open any of my wines
He said that when I finally let go..
Me: You didn't open even one
Him: I don't drink wine
Me: Then why do you have them?
Him: For my own personal reasons
I yawned..
Him: I guess that's good night.. I'll go catch up on work
He walked up to the door..
Me: What exactly are we doing?
He turned and looked at me..
Him: Sorry?
I lifted my head up..
Me: Why did you steal my battery?
He chuckled..
Him: What?
Me: It wasn't a coincidence that you were there exactly when I was stranded, plus I felt it in your pocket as I was sitting ontop of you
He took it out..
Him: I guess it wasn't a perfect crime after all
I looked at him..
Him: After what happened to us I knew very well that you wouldn't give me another chance so easily
He came and sat down next to me..
Him: Look I'm very sorry I'm actually angry at myself for thinking the worst of you without even asking first
I kept quiet for a while...
Me: If this is turning into a relationship I don't want your money, I don't want expensive gifts from you, I don't want anything of that nature other than love and respect
He squeezed my thigh..
Him: Deal..
Me: And please don't hurt me
Him: Don't hurt me too
He leaned over and kissed me on my nose bridge then my lips. One thing about wine is the it can betray you even in a compromising situation. As we were kissing I extended my hand to his crotch..
Me: Tomorrow I might wake up and remember none of this
Him: Trust me.. You will remember
It has always been about sex and nothing more but tonight the warmth I didn't feel it only in my Cookie but also on my chest and my heart was doing a rhythm of it's own. Once upon a time strong arms hurt me but tonight strong arms are intending on making love to me..
I ran my hand on his locks as his hand went inside my jeans, fear quickly kicked in and I stopped him. I opened my eyes and he did too, we stared deep in each other's eyes..
Him: It's okay
I didn't have fear because of what Buda did but it's because of the incident we had that night, what if he feels disgusted again? What if we fight again?
Me: We can't do this
Him: Snowy..
Me: I'm sorry I have to go
I got out of bed and looked for my sneakers, I felt his arm around my waist. He literally picked me up and threw me on the bed and then got ontop of me, he pinned my arms on the bed. He smashed his lips against me still pinning me like that..

.
KRESI

I opened my eyes and looked beside me Shadow was not laying by my side.. I lifted my head up..

Me: Shadow??

I got out of bed and looked for him, I saw him at the back through the sliding door. He was smoking, I went to him. He wasn't smoking a cigarette, he was smoking weed..

Me: Hey

He looked at me and didn't say anything..

Me: Are you okay?

I got closer to him and coughed a little..

Him: Everything is fine.. Go back to bed

Me: Doesn't seem soo

He smoked again..

Him: Someone helped my baby mama get custody of our Daughter

Me: Huh?

Him: It's a long and complicated story but I feel like a failure

Me: Wait I don't understand..

Him: You don't have to understand

He threw away half of the joint then put it out..

Him: Just need to know who it is.. I don't want any man Fathering my Daughter

Me: I don't understand anything I thought you said I'm going to meet her

Him: I know and you will

He held my hand..

Him: Come let's go to bed.. I might need some head tonight

.

.

SNOWY

I never knew how amazing it is to give yourself away sexually to someone that you have feelings for, I enjoyed every part of him as much as he enjoyed me.

I can't even explain the feeling, it was something beautiful, something special and something I will never forget. I felt his warm breath against my neck, there way he grabbed my afro or gently squeezed my breasts as the juices I was producing made him vulnerable. I was so sure that he was never going to get off me. My nails sinking deeper into his skin as he increased the pace, his tongue dancing around with mine as our bodies didn't deny us the pleasure. He turned on the side and laid on his back while I took over from him, we didn't even dare think of using a condom..

37 (short insert)

SNOWY

The first thing that hit me hard the following morning was a headache, a very terrible headache. I was actually woken up by it. I opened my eyes to a different room, everything flooded back after a few minutes of me opening my eyes. I got up and panicked, we didn't even use a condom. I looked around and I was alone, the room was even quiet. I got out of bed and stumbled around the floor looking for my clothes. I found my underwear, skinny Jean, sneakers, bra and my descreet socks. I couldn't find my tshirt. Wearing a tight underwear with my tight jeans adding more pressure, my cookie was suffocating and it made the soreness a bit worse. I only remember the first two rounds the rest of the night I don't remember, but I think we had more sex because I remember I went back to finish off the bottle of wine. My headache was really not having any mercy on me, and I felt very dehydrated. My first thought was that Thobekgale woke up and left, probably to work or somewhere else. That really hurt a bit because I have experienced that with men they hit it and then in the morning you wake up to R150 on the

dressing table with a note that reads "Had a great night, I'll call you" then they never call unless they wanna hit it again. I found him in the kitchen, he was on his phone. I exhaled in relief..

Him: Okay.. Bye.. I love you too

He lowered his phone..

Him: Had to make sure that Naledi arrived at school safe since I couldn't drive her

He was on his sweat pants, he was shirtless and also had his sleepers on..

Him: Good morning

Me: What time is it?

Him: Just after 07:00am

He came to me and wrapped his hands around my waist, he kissed me on my forehead..

Me: I have a terrible headache

Him: You went hard on my wine

He started patting me on my butt..

Me: And I'm in pain

Him: We went overboard

Me: I can tell

He perked me on the lips..

Him: You have to drink a lot of water

Me: Don't you have any pain killers?

Him: I'll check for you

He let go of me and went to check for pain killers, I went and drank water. I drank one full glass and it brought back a bit of that drunk feeling..

He came back with pain killers and I drank..

Me: Why didn't you go to work?

Him: I cannot just wake up and go to work and leave you like that, like we had some one night stand

I sat down on the high chair..

Me: I'll buy a Dr's note I won't be able to function at work

He came and sat down on the chair next to mine..

Me: We didn't even use a condom.. What if I'm hiv positive?

Him: Then I'll kill you

Me: Really though we took a big risk

Him: I know

Me: I have to buy and emergency pill

Him: an emergency pill?

Me: I'm fertile

Him: having a baby would it be a bar thing?

Me: Thobekgale we hardly know each other, our relationship just started last night plus after the mistakes I made with Layla

Him: But with Layla you were alone.. Now you have me

Me: I know but it's early for us to think about having a kid or kids for that matter

He kept quiet..

Me: I think you should take me home I'm sure everyone is worried

I got down from the High chair when someone knocked..

He walked to open and I just stood there..

Him: Nissi?

Her: Hey you

She hugged him..

Him: Why didn't you call me and told me that you coming?

Her: And ruin the surprise?

She walked in and saw me standing there..

Thobekgale closed the door..

Him: Meet Snowy... Snowy this is my Sister Nissi

Her: Hello
Me: Hey
Him: Snowy is my girlfriend
She hid her facial expression with a smile..
Him: So what brings you here?
Her: What happened to you?
She said that referring to the gauze..
Him: Just an accident
She unzipped her bag and took out a card,she handed it to him. He took it and read it after reading he closed it and handed it back to her..
Him: I'm not coming
Her: Why not?
Him: Riley is obviously going to be there
Her: So?
He gave her a deadly look..
Her: You doing this for me I really want you to be there
Him: You chose the same date of my Mother's burial and then you expect me to be there and act happy on the day that we buried Sheeda while her killer sits across me
Her: You no saint either
Him: Eyy!!!
That scared me out too..
I can see that she was getting a bit upset..
Me: uhm I'll take a taxi
Him: I'll drive you home
Me: It's fine Tshepi I..
Him: Sit down!
I went back on the high chair..
Her: So you would really break my heart jump because I'm marrying your worst enemy?
Him: Break your heart? What do you know about heart break? You killed me! You faked your own death!
Her: Ohw yes Tpee let's shift blame! That's what you do best shift blame!!
I stood there and I looked at them, these two were not fighting like Brother and Sister.. There seems more to the story..

38

SNOWY

I don't know what really went down in that flat but all I know is that Thobekgale has been in a foul mood ever since. That girl who claimed to be his Sister had more to put on the plate than what Thobekgale introduced her to me as, he said it's his Sister but the tension and everything didn't really prove that they siblings. He literally didn't say a word in the car, He even drove to the mall first before dropping me off at home so I could get the emergency pill. He didn't say anything he just gave me his card to swipe for it and get everything else that I wanted. The old me would've went crazy with it but I'm really trying to get my shit together and be independent, I don't want my Daughter growing up in an environment where she sees me being independent on a guy. I want her to know that a woman doesn't need a man to be independent, it doesn't matter where you work but as long as you can buy yourself airtime, toiletries and what not then you don't need a man to be independent..

He pulled up at the gate, we sat in the car for a few seconds without saying anything. I have never seen him like this, though I am hardcore myself but now I didn't wanna say anything that would piss him off because I didn't want us to have a big fight..

Me: Thank you for the ride home

He didn't reply..

Me: Bye

I opened the door got out in hopes that he would grab my arm then turn me to kiss him but he did nothing of that, he let me get out and walk in the yard without him saying anything...

I didn't spot my Father's car anywhere he probably is at work, the garage door was open and only Okuhle's car was in the garage. I went the other way and opened the kitchen door then walked in, I closed it and then exhaled. Okuhle showed up with a dish on her hand..

Her: Look who decided to show up... We were even about to report you missing

Me: Hey

Her: You look like hell

Me: I know

Layla entered the kitchen with a bowl in her hands..

Layla: Khukhu look I'm finished!

Okuhle took the bowl from her..

Okuhle: Wow!! I am going to buy you a lot of marshmallows

Layla turned and looked at me with a bit of what she was eating around her mouth..

I didn't know what to say, I was frozen..

Okuhle: Come I want you to meet someone

They both came closer. Okuhle Crouched so she could be at the same level as her..

Okuhle: Do you know who this is?

She shook her head no..

Okuhle: This is Snowy.. She is your Mommy

Layla didn't respond..

Okuhle: Before you became this old you were once in her tummy.. You grew in her tummy until you became this big

Layla looked down..

Layla: Ahhh..

Okuhle looked at me as she got up to stand up straight..

Layla: It's not a one day job.. It's going to take a bit of time

She walked away leaving me with Layla..

(After 10 seconds)

I wiped my tears that were streaming down my cheeks..

Me: Uhm do you wanna wipe your mouth?

She nodded..

Me: Okay let's go

I held her hand and she didn't refuse, that melted my heart and I won't lie..

.

.

TSHEPISO

The history between Me and Nissi is very deep, deeper than anyone's understanding. Nissi came into my house when she was very young I think 18 or 19. Our old time helper was the one who brought her into our house, said she desperately needed a job. By then I was just a teenager out of control very much spending my Father's money and influenced by my Uncle into the life of crime. I dated the type of girls that you wouldn't marry, the type of girls where you flash money they flash everything. Nissi was ordinary, she was your ordinary girl next door and I never thought I would fall in love with her. There was nothing special about her..

To cut the whole story short we ended up starting a relationship and I fell hard for her until my Father thought that it is inappropriate to have such a young girl as our maid, he saw it as an exploitation and with my Mother no longer able being able to have kids they decided to adopt Nissi. Dad put her through school and she really worked hard, got good marks which made my Dad to love her more as a daughter and it really messed up our relationship. Now she is getting married to my worst enemy Shane, Shane happens to be in a Gangster gang known as the

"bloods" the same gang whose leader killed my Mother because we were beefing. Besides her being my step Sister but she was my first love, I will always have that soft spot for her but what she is asking me to do now is impossible. I am a person who never shows hurt but my Mother's death kills me everyday, I am the reason why she is dead and Nissi wanna rub it off by choosing the exact same date that we buried her for a wedding, who fucken does that??

I parked my car in the driveway and went straight to the door front door, I opened and went inside..

Me: Vic??? (yelling)

It was quiet..

My Father is responsible for the break up between me and Nissi, as if like breaking us up wasn't enough he goes and approves of this??

Me: Vic??? (Yelling)

Nissi showed up from upstairs..

Her: Stop yelling he is not around

I didn't say anything I walked back to the door but then stopped, I turned around and looked at her..

Out of all the women I have dated before Nissi is the one who experienced my true demons, what Kresi has experienced with me is nothing compared to what Nissi went through with me..

I looked at her..

Me: Don't make me go back to the old me.. Don't make me go back to Tpee because an innocent girl that I truly love is going to suffer

I walked away..

.

.

SNOWY

Me: 1..2..3..Here I come!!

I don't know how but I found myself playing hide and seek with Layla..

Me: I wonder where she could be?

I could hear her giggling behind the curtain..

Me: Oh my, my, my.. I wonder where she should be hiding

I shifted a few chairs from the dining table to make it seem like I didn't see her..

She shifted the curtain..

Her: Here!!! Here!!! I am here!!!

I don't think she understands the whole concept of hide and seek..

I went and shifted the curtain..

Me: There she is!! There she is!!

She started laughing and ran away, I got her and we fell on the carpet..

Her: You found me Mommy!!!!

I stopped rolling on the carpet and looked at her..

Me: You want something to drink?

She nodded..

I don't know where that comes from but I think Okuhle has a hand on it..

I picked her up and we walked to the kitchen..

I put her on the kitchen counter..

Me: Okay let me pour you some juice

Her: Mommy look

I turned and looked her..

She stuck out her tongue..

Her: This is my tongue

Me: Wow that's a pretty small tongue

I turned around to continue pouring her the juice, I couldn't stop smiling. I might have lost a few years with her but she is 5 she is at an age where she probably won't recall the years I missed with her, from hereon I will make sure that I become the best parent.

I put her down and then gave her the cup..

Me: Don't spill... Let's go I'll put cartoons for you

We walked to the lounge. I switched on the TV for her and put her on the couch..

Me: I will be right back

I went and got my phone, I switched it on and then sent Thobekgale a text:

"I love you, and thank you"

I stood at the doorway and looked at Layla, Thobekgale has given me the best gift ever. I went through my bag and saw the morning after pill, I looked at it. I wasn't really sure if I should drink I mean he has done something no nigga would ever do for me and I saw it in his eyes this morning how much he wants another child, I don't know if I should give him this gift too or just wait to see how our relationship would go..

39

SNOWY

Okuhle disturbed me from my thoughts, I was still standing at the doorway with the emergency pills in my hand..

Her: Is everything okay?

Me: Yes everything is fine.. I was... I was just drinking these pills

She snatched them from me..

Me: Okuhle..

She walked in at the kitchen and I followed her..

Her: Emergency pill? Snowy..

Me: Well..

Her: Last night I was mad worried about you and wena you were getting it on? Who was it? Thobekgale?

Me: Give me back my pill

Her: You didn't use a condom

She handed me the package..

Her: Snowy how can you be so reckless?

Me: I don't need a lecture from you Okuhle I am the oldest here

I took the pill and drank it..

Me: Can I talk to you?

Her: Yes

Me: I'm serious Okuhle

Her: I'm serious too

Me: Thobekgale and I we are official

Her: Relationship official?

Me: Yes.. Last night we did the did today I almost didn't wanna drink the pills

Her: Why?

Me: Our talk this morning.. I could see it in his eyes that he wants a baby so bad

Her: And you thought of giving him?

Me: He gave me Layla

Her: Snowy he is Thobekgale he can give you anything, tomorrow he can get you a car.. He can get you anything because he can afford it but you giving him a baby.. That's something you can't take back weren't you guys stabbing each other not so long ago? Didn't you say you hate him and all that?

I kept quiet..

Her: I think you have to give your relationship a try first before you take that big step.. Plus you just found Layla you still have to show her a Mother's love

Me: That's what I've been thinking too

Her: Aren't you even supposed to be at work?

Me: I'm buying a Dr's note I can't go to the Dr looking like this.. Can I use your car?

Her: Yeah sure
Me: I'll go with Layla
Her: You guys seem to be hitting it off
Me: You know what you did
Her: What did I do?
Me: You know.. You brainwashed the poor kid
Her: I did no such
Me: Yes you did
Her: Whatever
We both laughed..

.

.

TSHEPISO

I drove straight to my Mother's grave, I still can't believe that Nissi would do this. Out of all the dates she could choose, she had to pick this one..

I took out my phone and checked it, I had received a message from Snowy. I read it but didn't reply..

My Father's doesn't know that my Mom died because of me, she became a victim to an ongoing beef with my number one enemy and unfortunately I couldn't protect her. I blame myself everyday, if it wasn't for me she was still going to be alive. She was a very beautiful woman and a very humble soul, she was the only woman who could get me back to my senses when I was losing it. I felt tears burning my eyes, I turned around and collected myself. She will never meet Naledi, she will never meet any of my future kids or the woman who is going to have my heart and lock it forever..

I turned again and looked at her grave for a while just reminiscing on the old times when I saw my father approaching, I don't even know where he parked his car. He came and stood next to me without saying anything, we both look at her picture..

(After 5min)

Him: Wanna grab a beer and talk about it?

I exhaled..

Me: Why not?

He put his hand on my shoulder and squeezed tight..

.

.

BUDDA

Prison can change a person. It can turn you good or turn you bad, it depends on what thoughts you had while you were inside..

I stopped and looked at the fence, I spent years in there I only had visitors the first few month and then after that I had no one visiting me. I was alone while everyone was out there enjoying their lives..

I had to fight for survival, I had to make my mark but most all I had to belong. I walked down the road with a big smile on my face, a lot of people will have to pay..

.

.

SNOWY

The surgery had people already waiting, I think I was number 6 or 7. I kept on checking my phone for a message or a missed call from Thobekgale but nothing, I even felt like a fool for sending him that text. I let out a sigh and looked at Layla she couldn't keep still on her chair, I checked my phone again and nothing. I put it away..

Layla: What are we doing here?

Me: Sn.. I mean Mommy is sick we going to see a Dr

She nodded..

I hope that girl didn't come to ruin things between me and Thobekgale..

40

TSHEPISO

We went to some bar, got ourselves some chilli bites and beer..

Dad: This year marks 3 years since your Mother has been gone

Me: I know.. I still cannot get used to it nor accept it

Him: I understand.. Reason why I haven't been able to marry again, she has left a very big void

Me: I wish I had more time with her

Him: So do I

He drank his beer..

Him: So are you serious with this girl?

I looked at him..

Him: I overheard Nissi and Kresi talking

Me: Kresi doesn't wanna learn to close her mouth

Him: I don't think she's happy in her new relationship

Me: I really don't care

Him: She spends a lot of time at my house and now she has befriended Siphokazi unfortunately I can't just give her money so she can go.. I don't think it's money she's after

A few seconds went by while silence spoke louder than our lips moving..

Me: Nissi is getting married

Him: She told me

Me: I'm not going

Him: After everything you put her through I think you should go, it will mean a lot to her for you to be there

Me: I don't wanna go

Him: I understand how you feel..

Me: Do you?

Him: Tshepi you and Nissi are all I have, she may not be my blood but I adopted her she is my Daughter and she has made me proud in a lot of ways. I love both of you and I want both of you to be happy and get along, be a close knit family I don't wanna die tomorrow and you guys separate I want both of you to continue the Thobekgale legacy even when I'm gone

I drank my beer..

Me: I'll see.. She's having the wedding on the same date that we buried Mom

Him: I know but this is what Sheeda would've wanted you know your Mom

I thought for a while..

Him: How are things between you and this girl.. Are things serious?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I think I love her alot.. Snowy is not like any of them girls I've dated before. She is very straight forward, stands her ground, wouldn't allow a man to mistreat her I enjoy being with her a lot

He nodded..

Him: I would really like to meet her

Me: You will.. I'm thinking of getting us a house in the long run

Him: Marriage?

Me: Naah I don't wanna ruin a perfectly good relationship with marriage after my experience with Kresi I think I'm going to hold off on marriage a little

Him: I understand you.. Maybe you can bring her over for dinner tomorrow night

Me: Will Nissi be there?

Him: I am not sure even if she is around you is that going to be a problem?

I got my phone from the table..

Me: No it's not going to be a problem

.
.

BUDDA

I went straight to my Mother-in-law's house the last time I heard everyone moved in there when I got locked up so my wife told me the last time she came to visit me in jail..

My Mother in law was very happy to see me, her eyes even filled up with tears. She was alone when I got there..

Me: I don't know when last I had a good bath

Her: I can see that it has been a while

Me: It has been.. Prison deprives you of the good things in life

Her: hlala phantsi I'll dish up for you

The first thing she did when I went to bath was to cook, she had prepared beef liver, Pap, and a creamy Mash potatoes

Her: I tried to be fast, did everything at once

Me: Smells good

Her: Here you go

Me: Thank you

Her: I'll pour you some juice

Me: Thank you very much for your hospitality

Her: You are most welcome

Me: Where is everyone?

Her: Well Khathu went to some society meeting after work, Okuhle moved out

Me: Okuhle moved out?

Her: She was influenced by Snowy... You know Snowy left a few months after she had testified again you

Me: Is it? I really didn't know that

Her: You don't know the pain she brought us in this house

Me: It's okay I understand

Her: It's very embarrassing and shameful for me to even look you in the eye after what my Granddaughter did to you, I wish Snowy was never part of this family

Him: All I want is peace between all of us, we can all move on from what happened and make peace. Snowy and Okuhle they need to come back home they can't just be wondering around like they were raised in a house that has no sense, they have to get married first before leaving the house that's how every girl should leave their house for good. Old customs and traditions should always be practiced

Her: You have a point there

.

.

SNOWY

I received a text from Thobekgale while I was at the kitchen preparing dinner and it read:

"I love you too, can I see you again tonight? I really miss that cute smile and that little annoying voice"

I was smiling like a retard after reading that..

I was about to text him back when the door opened, Okuhle and Layla were in the lounge watching Skeem saam, you cannot separate Okuhle from all these South African dramas..

My Dad walked in and he seemed a bit surprised to see me..

Him: Good evening

Me: Evening

He put his tool box on the floor..

Him: Can we talk?

Me: Uhm yes

Him: I know that you and I we have just found each other, I know you are old and capable of making your own decisions but you cannot just disappear and don't call

He was talking about last night..

Him: I am already getting that a lot from Sabby and I don't want you too, to pull the disappearing

card

Me: I know and I'm sorry

He pulled the chair and sat down..

Him: So you were with that rich arrogant guy?

This was awkward, I didn't say anything..

Him: Are you seeing him?

I exhaled and nodded..

Him: Do you trust him?

Me: I do

He looked at me for a long time..

Him: The last time I was not in your life cruel things happened to you and I'm not about to make that same mistake anymore.. If this guy wants you to spend nights at his house and everything me and him need to talk, you two aren't married he has to calm and ask permission from me if you can spend a night at his house

Me: Dad..

Him: Snowy you in the process of fighting for full custody everything that you do will surely affect the custody battle plus I think you have to bond with Layla first..I am not saying don't date but do get your priorities straight

He stood up from the chair..

Me: I want to talk to your boyfriend

He took his tool box and went to the lounge, this is not right. Thobekgale doesn't seem like someone who is going to respect my Dad's rules and what not, he is past that teen stage I just hope this doesn't turn out bad..

41

KRESI

Nissi took this thing of Tpee not wanting to attend her wedding really personal, she has been crying that it was inconveniencing me because I am helping her plan her wedding. There's things I have to go through with her but she is not emotional stable enough..

I knocked at her room..

Me: It's me

Her: Come in

I walked in..

Me: Hey

She sat up straight..

Her: Hello

I went and sat next to her..

Her: I wanna go back home tomorrow I miss my Son

Me: Ya I understand.. So are you going to travel back and forth for the wedding preparations?

She shook her head no..

Her: I'm thinking of canceling the wedding

Me: What? Just because Tshepi is not happy about it?

Her: No just because I feel my wedding is cursed a lot of people won't come. Shane is enemies with his own family and Yes it does hurt a lot that Tshepi won't come too

Me: Does it matter though if he comes or not?

Her: I want him there, I want him to witness my happiness

I thought deeply about this..

Me: I think there's a way I can help

She looked at me..

Me: Snowy

Her: Snowy? How is she going to help?

Me: Snowy is Tpee's everything right now you can talk to her and she can convince him

Her: Won't that be awkward?

Me: I don't know but you seem desperate

Her: I'll try... Thank you

Me: You welcome.. Now let's go Naledi and Siphokazi are waiting for us we have to help you pick the right colours

Her: Do we have enough wine?

Me: I hope so

She got out of bed and we went out.. I wonder if Snowy and I we will ever be civil with each other, I mean Tshepi and I have a child together so I will be a part of their lives..

.

SNOWY

He gently bit my neck it was a bit ticklish that I laughed..

Me: Stop..

He kissed me..

We were standing outside, I was standing against his car and he was in front of me with his hands around my waist and mine around his neck. Thobekgale always smells good, his cologne is not too much and it's very intoxicating..

We were talking and listening to music on the radio, they were playing "Donald_Landela" it seemed like an appropriate song for this moment..

Him: I thought you were going to pack an overnight bag and spend a night at my place, Kana I'm alone

Me: Where is the princess?

Him: She is with her Mom and her Aunt they helping her Aunt with her wedding preparations

Me: Okay

He imitated my voice..

Him: Okay?? Is that "I'm going inside to pack and overnight bag"

Me: I don't talk like that (Laughing)

Him: You do

Me: Mxm whatever..

Him: So?

Me: Well you have to talk to my Father first

Him: Your Father? Why?

Me: You know how Fathers are

Him: How old are you?

Me: Thobekgale just talk to him

Him: I am not a teen nor in my twenties

I just looked at him..

Him: Fine I'll talk to him

Me: Thank you

I kissed him on the cheek and hugged him..

Me: Let's go in

Him: Let me lock my car

He separated from me, my favourite song came up..

Me: Wait.. Wait... Wait don't, this is my favourite song!

Him: Huh?

Me: I love this song.. Let's wait till it finishes..

He stood against the car as I went crazy..

Me: iWank, iWank, iWank..

He laughed..

Him: The song doesn't sound South African..

Me: It's actually in English

Him: Really?

Me: Yes.. Afro B- Drogba (Joanna)

Him: Can you even dance? You can't like a song of this nature and not be able to dance, the

beat should move you

I laughed..

Me: Thobekgale I know how to dance

Him: I don't believe I can see

Me: Okay

I moved away to an open space and started dancing..

At first when I was collecting myself he laughed I could see from his face that he didn't believe I knew how to dance until I started dancing..

"Joanna you busy body busy tonight.. Joanna making no day dull me tonight.. Joanna your busy body giving me life Ooo, eh lifeeee.. Why you do me like Joanna Jo-Jo-Joanna? Why you do me like that Joanna Jo Jo Joanna"

As I got lost in my dance moves and the beat his mockery and doubt of a facial expression disappeared, he was so astonished that he got his hands out from his pockets..

I am a very good dancer, Fufu I the queen of dancing and she has taught me how to dance over the years. Talking about Fufu I have been trying to get a hold of her for a while now and she her phone has been off..

I didn't dance to the whole song, I just gave him enough to make him see that I can dance..

He didn't say anything for at least 20 seconds.

Me: And?

Him: All I'm going to say is "Give me one reason why ungenza so??"

I laughed..

Me: Let's go inside

He turned off the radio and then locked his car, he came to and put his arm around my shoulders. He pulled me closer and literally forced his tongue in my mouth..

Me: Thobekgale stop (Laughing).. You soo childish

Him: Says someone who was busy dancing ain't that childish

Me: No it's not

Him: Whatever!

Whenever I'm with him he makes me feel happy, I can be myself. I can act crazy, laugh like there's no tomorrow he completes me in every way..

.

.

SHADOW

When I saw them go inside the yard I started my car.

Snowy seems happy with him, I have never heard her laugh like that before neither be this free and comfortable..

My phone rang, I picked it up and answered..

Me: Hello

Voice: Shadow

Me: Boss?

Him: It's been a while

Me: It has been.. You didn't call me with the..

Him: I'm out I called you but you weren't reachable

Me: I was busy.. Apologies

Him: How are my girls

Me: They good I was just checking Snowy

Him: How is she?

Me: She's good.. She's very good

Him: So?

I cleared my throat..

Me: We have a problem and it's not minor

Him: A problem?

Me: I think he is dating Tshepiso Thobekgale

Him: Wie is dit?

Me: A very big and rich problem

Him: We the 28s

Me: Sir I pulled his file he is friends with really dangerous people

Him: I don't care!! We the 28s all you need to do is have him play in our territory if we get him in our territory we can get him inside and inside he will be vulnerable and useless no one can protect him

Me: Sir you don't und..

Him: I don't have to understand I am the general you do as I say!

Me: Yes Sir

Him: Salute soldier

Me: Salute General!

I lower my phone and sighed..

42

TSHEPISO

This was a very awkward situation for me having to be sat down by Snowy's Father and talk to him. Snowy offered us some juice, not really what I wanted but I didn't wanna seem rude in front of the old man..

Him: If I am not mistaken I believe that you and Snowy are in a relationship?

Me: Yes we are

He stared down at his glass for a couple of seconds.

Him: I was never in her life when she grew up it was not by choice but circumstances forced me too and I'm not proud of it, my absence made my Daughter to go through something that no woman or girl should ever go through. I wouldn't say it damaged her but I will say that it destroyed her at some point, forcing her to run away from home at a very early age. She lived on the streets and gave herself away to Men just so she can make ends meet and also for shelter. I blame myself everyday that if I fought hard for my Daughter none of this would've happened but Nevertheless she is still here. She is a strong and beautiful woman

I nodded to that..

Him: All I'm saying is that she is trying to build her life she is correcting her wrongs and starting over I don't want another man to play with her she has come very far

I cleared my throat..

Me: I understand very well where you coming from Sir and Snowy did share a bit of her pain with me. I want you to know that I have no intentions of hurting her, especially not deliberately. I love her and I also love being with her, she is an amazing person a very amazing person

Him: That she is to even have forgiven me from not being in her life when everything happened

Me: I am glad that you two are working things out

Him: Not only with me but also with her Daughter which is why she shouldn't spend much time away from home I think two days at your place once a week will be appropriate she is still in the process of fighting for full custody you welcome here but you cannot sleep over

Me: I totally understand

Him: What exactly are your intentions with her? Marriage? Kids?

Me: I divorced two years ago so I'm holding off a bit on marriage but that doesn't mean I'm not serious with your Daughter we have a good relationship so far and I don't want marriage ruining it I want us to wait a bit

Him: I think that's a good idea... See where your relationship goes first

Me: I promise you I will never let anyone hurt her like that

Him: I do trust you with her

Me: Thank you

He leaned forward and extended his hand to me..

Him: Then I give you my blessings with the relationship

I shook his hand..

Me: Thank you

.
.

SHADOW

Being in a gang is not easy you have to abide by the rules no matter how difficult they are. Budda became part of the 28s after he had killed at least 4 people in Sun city prison, we were told about him and the Gang was very impressed. Though he was at a different prison than ours but he made his mark and now he is a general, he is the reason why the 28s are now ruling in Gauteng Prisons. I am against what Budda is doing trying to go after my Baby Mama, I don't want my Daughter growing up having questions on what happened to her Mother but most of all the Love that I once had for Snowy doesn't allow me to do that. It doesn't allow me to hurt her in anyway. I could refuse but I'll be betraying the gang, when I go inside I will be tortured and when I am still outside they might send people to kill me so I do hope that Tpee will protect her from me, and from the gang..

I heard a knock at the door..

Me: Coming

I went to open and it was Budda, I wasn't expecting him so late..

Him: May I?

I shifted and he walked in..

He looked around at my small place..

Him: You living right

Me: I'm doing alright

I could kill him but I'll be inviting trouble for myself.

Him: So what's happening with my Snowy?

I looked at him without answering..

Him: She is Mine I had her since from when she was young, when I saw the recent photos you sent me shit!! She has grown exactly to be the type of woman I wanted her to be. Those thick thighs, perfect breasts, she is everything I wanted her to be

I kept quiet because what he was saying was not easy for me to digest..

Him: I never stopped thinking about her and the kind of fun we used to have, that moment when I entered her tight P..

I don't know what came over me but I grabbed him by his tshirt and pushed him against the fridge. I didn't say anything I just looked at him and he looked at my hand. I lowered my hand..

Him: She was never yours.. She has always been mine

He slept me a little on my cheek..

Him: She is mine

.
.

SNOWY

My Father allowed me to go and spend a few days at Thobekgale's place, I took Layla along I want her to get used to Naledi and Thobekgale since they going to be a big part of our lives.

Layla was sleeping on the backseat busy sucking her thumb..

Thobekgale: She is not going anywhere

I sat on my seat and faced my front..

Me: I still can't believe that I have her

Him: She is not going anywhere I'll make sure of that

I smiled at him..

Me: Thank you.. Thank you very much no one has ever done something like this for me

Him: You welcome

Me: I hope all is going to work out.. Especially with Naledi

Him: Well we a family so she has to accept how things are

I chuckled..

He held my hand and kissed it..
Him: I love you
Me: I love you too

43

SNOWY

Layla cried when I put her down I think it's because I woke her up from her sleep or it's the new environment, but when I laid down with her she settled down and then fell asleep. I slowly got out of bed so that I don't wake her up, I left the door open in case she wakes up at night and gets scared. I didn't switch off the passage light too..

I went back to the main bedroom and Thobekgale was sitting on the bed and concentrating on his laptop.

Him: Is she asleep?

Me: Yes she is

I walked up to him..

Me: What are you doing?

Him: I was just checking my Emails..

I got in bed and hugged him from the back..

Him: Now I'm almost done

Me: That's a lot of Emails

Him: I mostly concentrate on the important ones..

I waited for him to finish..

Him: All done

He put his laptop away and then stood up with me, He put me on his back..

Him: I have a surprise for you

We walked to his wardrobe and then he put me down. He got a small jewelery box..

Him: I got you this today

I took it and my heart started beating fast, I hope it's not a ring..

I opened and it was stud diamond earrings I exhaled..

Me: They beautiful how much did they cost?

Him: R500 it's not a real diamond it's a cubic zirconia stone

Me: Is it?

Him: Yeap

I knew he was lying through this teeth, Thobekgale doesn't look like someone who would buy something cheap..

Me: They are beautiful I like them

He perked me on my lips..

Him: I'm glad you like them

I put them back..

Me: I'm going to wear them at work tomorrow..

Him: Speaking of work, how are you getting to work tomorrow?

Me: Taxi.. I'll first drop off Layla and then go to work

Him: You are not taking a public transport

Me: Why not? Work is not that far from here plus I saw taxis at the gate an..

Him: Snowy you not taking a public transport that's final I'll get the company driver to chauffeur

Me: I thought we talked about this

Him: I didn't say I'm buying you a car I'm just getting you a driver

Me: Thobekgale..

He gave me a serious look and I kept quiet..

Him: Public transports are not safe, Layla is a child she should be safe at all times

He took out his phone..

Him: Before I forget tomorrow night we having dinner with my Father

That came unexpectedly..

Me: Your Father?

Him: Yes.. I'm coming let me try and call one of the drivers

He went out and I took my phone, I went straight on Google. I typed in "Tshepiso Thobekgale and his Father" cause I don't know his name and he came up, he even came up on Wikipedia..

"Victor Puleng Thobekgale"

I read about him and he is slightly above Practice Motsepe's networth, 300 000 difference.. His networth he is worth "2.5 Billion" Tshepiso on the other side is worth "20 Million". It just dawned on me that this people are rich. The main reason why Vic Thobekgale is worth soo much is because he has other businesses overseas apart from the pharmaceutical company here and the college. I got a panic attack right there I knew they were rich I didn't know they were this rich. I went on to read about their scandals, the media doesn't like Tshepi at all. Things that they write about him are not nice at all, I was surprised to see how much murder cases he was attached too. It seems like there's a lot that he is not telling me..

He came back in and I put my phone down..

Him: You sorted

I looked at him without saying anything, I didn't think he was this dangerous..

Him: What?

Me: Nothing

Him: I'm making Macaroni&Cheese wanna help?

Me: I'll be right there

Him: You sure you okay?

I nodded..

Him: Okay

He walked out, I took my phone and read again. The story that caught my attention was about some girl Palesa Muller, I checked and clicked on the one that led me straight to a Facebook page named "RIP Palesa Muller" they haven't posted for like 3 years but most of the post were about her brutal death, her funeral, and justice for her. Thobekgale was attached to the girl's brutal killing apparently they were dating and after a while her body was found all naked, strangled, and stabbed at least 30 times. They pinned her death to Thobekgale but due to lack of evidence he was never charged. Not only her but there's another girl Charmaine who was dating Thobekgale and after a while she was involved in a very tragic accident and again they pinned him to the murder. All of these happened 3 years ago but it makes me wonder am I dating someone who is capable of this, will I also turn up missing? I really got scared.. He had more allegations of domestic violence against his ex when wife, the internet has nothing nice to say about him..

.

.

KRESI

Everyone had gone to bed but I saw that the light in Nissi's room was still on..

I knocked..

Her: Come in

I opened and walked in..

Me: Thought you were sleeping

Her: No I'm just reading some book

Her: What book?

Her: "Water is Thicker than Blood" by Precious Moloi she's a pretty good Author

Me: Don't know her

Her: She's not all out there I saw someone who shared her post thought I should buy and see

Me: And?

Her: Pretty good and emotional book

Me: How much?

Her: R180

Me: You will send me details on how to buy
Her: Yes I will
Me: So I was thinking about your situation
Her: What situation?
Me: Tshepi not wanting to come to your wedding
She exhaled..
Me: I might have a plan
Her: What Plan?
Me: There's only one person who he will listen too
Her: Naledi?
Me: No he can easily manipulate her plus they no longer close since he found out that she broke her virginity
Her: What? And he didn't kill her?
Me: He wanted too but he can't Naledi is his only child so he can't really disown her
Her: So what plan?
Me: Snowy
Her: Huh?
Me: Tpee can only listen to her.. I think he genuinely loves her so if you can convince her she will convince him
Her: Aii isn't that weird? Me and her aren't close
Me: You are his step Sister and first love you will always have that leverage
She looked at me for a while..
Her: I hope you not using me to stir up trouble between them
Me: What?
Her: Are you?
Me: Wow
I stood up..
Me: Shoot me for trying to help!
I walked straight to the door. She has a point though I was trying to use her to ruin them..

.

BUDDA

My Mother in law was not around she had gone to some church camp for widows, their Pastor took them out she left earlier today. So it was just me and my wife left..
She took my plate..
Me: Thank you for the great dinner
She smiled and went to the kitchen, I followed her..
Me: When last did you talk to the girls?
Her: It has been a while
I removed my belt..
Her: Why?
Me: Just asking
Her: Can I ask something?
Me: Yeah
She turned around and I took off my pants..
Her: What are you doing?
Me: I wanna go and bath
She nodded..
Her: Did you really hurt my girls?
A few seconds passed..
Me: I cannot believe you asked me that?
Her: I just wanna know they can't hate you for no reason
Me: Okuhle is my biological daughter do you think can hurt my blood?

Her: Snowy?

Me: Snowy I took her as my child she was young when we met do you think I can hurt a baby? Did you see any changes and what not when she was young?

She thought for a second and then went back to washing the dishes..

Me: I would never hurt the girls

She kept quiet and I walked up to her with the belt..

Her: Everything is just confusing.. I lost all my children

I put the belt around her neck and strangled her. She couldn't scream or do anything. She went down on the floor busy scratching my arms..

Me: Don't fight it.. It's over Dear just don't fight it

She stopped fighting back..

Me: Yes just let go

After a few minutes she remained still, I kissed her on her forehead as I laid her down onto the kitchen floor..

Me: Good girl

SHADOW

Budda called me in the middle of the night said that he was in trouble and I should come over, I didn't know what was happening but all I know is that he is the general and when he says jump you have to ask "How high"

I drove up to the address that he gave me and to my surprise a woman was laying down dead on the kitchen floor with a belt around her neck. The coldness that was reflected by her eyes made me to notice straight away that indeed she was gone..

I looked at him, he didn't seem like he regretted what he did. He was standing there with a glass of water in his hand..

Him: Help me with the body

Me: What happened?

Him: Shit happened.. Just help me move the body, we going to make it look like a robbery gone wrong

Me: Who is this?

Him: My wife... Did you bring the suitcase?

I nodded..

Him: Go get it

I went out to my car to get it..

.

.

SNOWY

The following morning I woke up and prepared Layla for preschool when I received a call from Okuhle that Layla's Preschool caught fire last night, the kids won't be able to go to preschool for at least a few weeks..

Okuhle: Don't you have anyone who can stay with her at least for a couple of hours while I go to my job interview?

Me: I don't guess I'll be late for work

Her: I'm really sorry

Me: Don't be

Her: I'll see you then

Me: Good luck with the interview

Her: Thank you and say hi to Layla

Me: I will

Her: Bye, I love you

Me: I love you too

I put my phone down and looked at Layla..

Me: You are not going to Preschool today
Thobekgale showed up at the kitchen all dressed up for work..
Him: Why?
He came and kissed me on my forehead..
Me: Her Preschool caught fire last night
Him: What happened?
Me: I really don't know now I have to miss work again
He looked at me..
Me: Okuhle has a job interview and she can't look after her today
I exhaled..
Me: I'm going to lose my job then they'll take her away from me, social services is looking for this kind of mistake
He looked at her..
Him: I'll take her to work
Me: Thobekgale you the CEO of a multimillion rand company how are you going to babysit?
He came and grabbed my Ass then whispered in my Uncle..
Him: Like you said.. I'm the CEO
I looked at Layla..
Thobekgale: Layla good morning
Layla: Morning
Him: Do you know who I am?
Layla shook her head no..
Thobekgale: I'm Uncle Tshepi.. I'm dating your Mom do you know what dating is?
Me: Thobekgale she's 5..
Him: You will come with me to work
Layla: No I am going to preschool.. My teacher said we not supposed to miss school unless you going to the Dr
Me: Yeah sweetie your preschool is..
Thobekgale: They are fixing it.. They said someone set it on fire
Me: Someone set it on fire? I thought they said it burned but never said someone set it on fire..
How do you know that?
Him: I'm assuming
Me: Thobekgale you didn't plan this did you?
Him: What?
Me: Layla's Preschool burns down and then the following day Okuhle gets an interview, she has never said anything about applying for a job
Him: It's a coincidence
Me: No it's not.. You planned this didn't you? Like the battery thing?
Him: You overthinking things.. Why would I plan this?
Thobekgale: Come here baby
He picked Layla up..
Him: Let's go get your backpack
They walked away..
This was very troubling for me, Layla seems not to be scared of strangers at all. She is okay with everyone who just talks to her, she can easily get kidnapped..

.

KRESI

After dropping Naledi off at school I went to check up on Shadow. He calls me every night but last night he didn't call, which was very unlike him. I know our relationship has been rocky these past few weeks and I really don't like it...

Me: Let me make you breakfast

I could see that he was very down and lost deep in his thoughts..

Me: Are you okay?

Him: I'm fine

Me: I was thinking that you get your Daughter to come visit me and Naledi for a few days, so that we can get to know her

He shook his head no..

Him: Snowy won't allow

I almost dropped the cheese..

Me: Snowy who?

Him: Huh?

Me: You said Snowy won't allow

Him: My baby mama her name is Snowy, well actually that's her nickname but everyone calls her that

Me: Snowy the one who is working at La Buena restaurant?

Him: Yes.. You know her?

I slammed the cheese on the table..

Me: Seems like I can never get a break from this woman! What is she? A witch? She's starting to get in my way

Him: What are you talking about?

I sighed..

Me: She is dating my Ex Husband

Him: What?

.

.

SNOWY

We walked out to his car, I had my bag and also Layla's bag. Thobekgale was holding Layla..

Him: What's wrong? Still think I planned everything?

Me: No I'm worried about Layla

Him: Why?

Me: She...

I saw some people rushing to us..

Thobekgale: Shit!!!

Me: What?

Him: Whatever they going to ask keep quiet

Me: Why?

Him: Just don't answer anything!

Before I knew it the camera was flashing right in front of us getting pictures at every angle, some woman had her phone out..

Her: Mr Thobekgale is this the new Woman in your life?

Me: What's going on?

Him: Just keep quiet

He unlocked his car then open the door..

I got it and he opened the back door to put Layla, I don't know what really happened with the guy who was holding the camera but when he was an about to take a picture of Thobekgale putting Layla inside the car he slightly hit Layla with the camera on her leg and Thobekgale lost it. He put Layla down and then turned pushing the camera guy from the way and he fell..

Thobekgale: Get the fuck away!!! How did you even get in here?

He walked over to the driver's side..

Everything was was overwhelming for Layla she started crying..

Me: It's okay Sweetie

Lady: We just wanna know if this is your news family?

Him: Fuck off!!! How you going to pull this shit in front of a child, now you going to get your next pay based on a picture of a 5 year old you should be ashamed of yourself

Her: So this is your new family?

She hit my side of the window..

Her: Mam' would you care to say something?

Thobekgale banged the door and Walked over to my side, I quickly opened the door and got out before things got Nasty. It was a mess, Layla was scared, he was mad and this woman with her crew they were not backing down..

Layla was banging on the window while crying..

Her: Mommy!!!

They were really scaring my Daughter..

44

SHADOW

Budda called me in the middle of the night said that he was in trouble and I should come over, I didn't know what was happening but all I know is that he is the general and when he says jump you have to ask "How high"

I drove up to the address that he gave me and to my surprise a woman was laying down dead on the kitchen floor with a belt around her neck. The coldness that was reflected by her eyes made me to notice straight away that indeed she was gone..

I looked at him, he didn't seem like he regretted what he did. He was standing there with a glass of water in his hand..

Him: Help me with the body

Me: What happened?

Him: Shit happened.. Just help me move the body, we going to make it look like a robbery gone wrong

Me: Who is this?

Him: My wife... Did you bring the suitcase?

I nodded..

Him: Go get it

I went out to my car to get it..

.

.

SNOWY

The following morning I woke up and prepared Layla for preschool when I received a call from Okuhle that Layla's Preschool caught fire last night, the kids won't be able to go to preschool for at least a few weeks..

Okuhle: Don't you have anyone who can stay with her at least for a couple of hours while I go to my job interview?

Me: I don't guess I'll be late for work

Her: I'm really sorry

Me: Don't be

Her: I'll see you then

Me: Good luck with the interview

Her: Thank you and say hi to Layla

Me: I will

Her: Bye, I love you

Me: I love you too

I put my phone down and looked at Layla..

Me: You are not going to Preschool today

Thobekgale showed up at the kitchen all dressed up for work..

Him: Why?

He came and kissed me on my forehead..

Me: Her Preschool caught fire last night

Him: What happened?

Me: I really don't know now I have to miss work again
He looked at me...
Me: Okuhle has a job interview and she can't look after her today
I exhaled..
Me: I'm going to lose my job then they'll take her away from me, social services is looking for this kind of mistake
He looked at her..
Him: I'll take her to work
Me: Thobekgale you the CEO of a multimillion rand company how are you going to babysit?
He came and grabbed my Ass then whispered in my Uncle..
Him: Like you said.. I'm the CEO
I looked at Layla..
Thobekgale: Layla good morning
Layla: Morning
Him: Do you know who I am?
Layla shook her head no..
Thobekgale: I'm Uncle Tshepi.. I'm dating your Mom do you know what dating is?
Me: Thobekgale she's 5..
Him: You will come with me to work
Layla: No I am going to preschool.. My teacher said we not supposed to miss school unless you going to the Dr
Me: Yeah sweetie your preschool is..
Thobekgale: They are fixing it.. They said someone set it on fire
Me: Someone set it on fire? I thought they said it burned but never said someone set it on fire..
How do you know that?
Him: I'm assuming
Me: Thobekgale you didn't plan this did you?
Him: What?
Me: Layla's Preschool burns down and then the following day Okuhle gets an interview, she has never said anything about applying for a job
Him: It's a coincidence
Me: No it's not.. You planned this didn't you? Like the battery thing?
Him: You overthinking things.. Why would I plan this?
Thobekgale: Come here baby
He picked Layla up..
Him: Let's go get your backpack
They walked away..
This was very troubling for me, Layla seems not to be scared of strangers at all. She is okay with everyone who just talks to her, she can easily get kidnapped..

.

KRESI

After dropping Naledi off at school I went to check up on Shadow. He calls me every night but last night he didn't call, which was very unlike him. I know our relationship has been rocky these past few weeks and I really don't like it...
Me: Let me make you breakfast
I could see that he was very down and lost deep in his thoughts..
Me: Are you okay?
Him: I'm fine
Me: I was thinking that you get your Daughter to come visit me and Naledi for a few days, so that we can get to know her
He shook his head no..
Him: Snowy won't allow

I almost dropped the cheese..

Me: Snowy who?

Him: Huh?

Me: You said Snowy won't allow

Him: My baby mama her name is Snowy, well actually that's her nickname but everyone calls her that

Me: Snowy the one who is working at La Buena restaurant?

Him: Yes.. You know her?

I slammed the cheese on the table..

Me: Seems like I can never get a break from this woman! What is she? A witch? She's starting to get in my way

Him: What are you talking about?

I sighed..

Me: She is dating my Ex Husband

Him: What?

.

.

SNOWY

We walked out to his car, I had my bag and also Layla's bag. Thobekgale was holding Layla..

Him: What's wrong? Still think I planned everything?

Me: No I'm worried about Layla

Him: Why?

Me: She...

I saw some people rushing to us..

Thobekgale: Shit!!!

Me: What?

Him: Whatever they going to ask keep quiet

Me: Why?

Him: Just don't answer anything!

Before I knew it the camera was flashing right in front of us getting pictures at every angle, some woman had her phone out..

Her: Mr Thobekgale is this the new Woman in your life?

Me: What's going on?

Him: Just keep quiet

He unlocked his car then open the door..

I got it and he opened the back door to put Layla, I don't know what really happened with the guy who was holding the camera but when he was an about to take a picture of Thobekgale putting Layla inside the car he slightly hit Layla with the camera on her leg and Thobekgale lost it. He put Layla down and then turned pushing the camera guy from the way and he fell..

Thobekgale: Get the fuck away!!! How did you even get in here?

He walked over to the driver's side..

Everything was was overwhelming for Layla she started crying..

Me: It's okay Sweetie

Lady: We just wanna know if this is your news family?

Him: Fuck off!!! How you going to pull this shit in front of a child, now you going to get your next pay based on a picture of a 5 year old you should be ashamed of yourself

Her: So this is your new family?

She hit my side of the window..

Her: Mam' would you care to say something?

Thobekgale banged the door and Walked over to my side, I quickly opened the door and got out before things got Nasty. It was a mess, Layla was scared, he was mad and this woman with her crew they were not backing down..

Layla was banging on the window while crying..

Her: Mommy!!!
They were really scaring my Daughter.

45

SNOWY

What happened earlier this morning really got to me I couldn't even focus well at work because I was very worried about Layla, that journalist really scared her with the camera man. How can they be this cruel? Scaring a child like that I mean they were supposed to leave us the minute she started crying, it was really unnecessary for them to do that. I was in the rest rooms calling Thobekgale but the line would cut, I wanted to check up on Layla..

I went back to the main dinning hall, Sabby was standing at the counter busy doing the filing..

Him: There's a customer that requested for you

Me: Who?

He pointed at the Table and it was Nissi...

Me: Nissi requested for me?

Him: Nissi?

Me: It's Thobekgale's Sister

He put the file down and looked at me..

Him: You are rubbing shoulders with rich People now

Me: It's not like that

Him: Whatever you wanna call it

Me: Let me attend to her

I walked up to her..

Me: Good morning

Her: Snowy how are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Her: I'm fine thank you

A moment of silence came..

Me: I heard that you requested for me

Her: Ohh Yes..

She pointed at the chair..

Her: Please sit down

Me: I can't... My Boss is very strict

Her: I'll pay for the minutes that you going to be sitting here with me... Matter of fact I can talk to your Boss

I looked at her for a while..

Me: You know.. You never came across to me as that type of Person

Her: Sorry?

Me: Just because you have money doesn't mean you can buy me at work.. This is my job and I take it seriously

Her: I'm sorry but it's not like that.... I just desperately need your help

Me: We hardly even know each other what can I possibly help you with?

Her: Please Snowy..

I looked at her and she did seem desperate..

I sat down..

Me: If my Boss sees me.. It's all on you

Her: Thank you I won't take much of your time

.

.

TSHEPISO

Carl is a good person to talk to when you mad. He is sensible, always sober minded and gives good advice. Layla was sitting on the carpet with a colouring book and some crayons that my

receptionist organized for her, she has been in a foul mood ever since that incident this morning..

Carl: You can't sue Lorna

Me: Carl, this Dam..

I looked at Layla and she looked at me, I slightly smiled at her. She went back to colouring..

Me: She had a struggling newspaper she wasn't making profit so she thought that coming after me would make her sell, and it did. I have sold her soo much copies she should be owning a range rover or something by now

Carl: If she goes through with this article and then you sue her, People will think that what she wrote about you is true. I doubt she will show Layla's face because she knows that you will sue her for that which you have every right too but all I'm going to say is that let her run the story

Me: What about Snowy and Layla? They didn't sign up for this life

Him: Unfortunately Snowy will have to get used to it, you not just anyone you're Tshepiso Thobekgale your Dad's is in the Forbes list and you are quite a millionaire yourself running a successful pharmaceutical company you are going to be the Media's person of interest at all times. All that I'm going to say is that, you and Snowy should find a way to shield Layla from all of this. Everything is going to be fine look at Naledi, she went through the same thing and the media doesn't scare her no more

I exhaled..

Him: Don't do anything stupid Lorna is trying to get a reaction from you

Me: Ayt thanks man

Him: Stay cool

I put my cellphone on my table and looked at Layla..

Me: Do you want ice cream?

She shrugged her shoulders..

I went to her and sat next to her..

Me: Are you hungry?

She nodded..

Me: Let's go get something to eat

I stood up and picked her up, then we walked out of my office..

.

.

SNOWY

Nissi: I know that you and I we not the best of friends, make that we even hardly know each other and this will seem highly inappropriate but I am in the weeds here and I really need your help

Me: I don't know what I can help you with but..

Her: I am getting married soon and Tshepi doesn't want to come to my wedding because of a lengthy unsettling history

Me: I noticed that

Her: I am marrying someone that he doesn't really get along with someone who is good friends with the person who killed his Mother

Me: Your Mother?

Her: Step Mother... I was adopted but yes she was like a Mother to me

Me: So why are you marrying someone who is friends with the person who killed your Mother?

Me: Shane wasn't around when all of that happened he just came into the picture recently and he didn't know about it

Me: Okay so how can I help you?

Her: I don't even know how to put this..

I looked at her..

Her: I want you to convince him to come

I laughed..

Me: You want me to convince him? Like convince Thobekgale? What makes you think he will agree? He is very stubborn

Her: He will listen because he loves you, if he loves you, you automatically become his weakness the only person who can get through to him. You're his heart
Me: For just a Sister you know a lot about how he feels when it comes to a relationship
Her: Trust me I do
I kept quiet for a while..
Me: Okay I'll help you but only on one condition
Her: What is that?
Me: I don't buy that story of you guys only being siblings I think there's more that happened between you two
Her: You right about that
Me: I wanna know everything
Her: Are you sure?
Me: Yes I'm sure
Her: Snowy it's the past and going back there I might come back with things that will scare you, things that might make you look at him somehow
Me: I just want to know that's all and I promise I won't tell him
Her: Okay aren't you guys coming over to my Dad's place for dinner tonight?
Me: He said so
Her: Then we will talk there
Me: No problem
Her: Nice earrings
Me: Thank you
Her: How much did they cost?
Me: Thobekgale bought them for me.. They didn't cost more than R500
She laughed..
Her: He told you that or you were actually there when he bought them?
Me: He told me that.. They not really R500 are they?
Her: Not a chance (Laughing)
Me: I knew it
Her: You beautiful I like your chubby cheeks
Me: Thank you very much.. You beautiful too
She took her bag..
Her: Let me not take too much of your time
Me: I guess I will see you later
Her: Later it is
She smiled at me and walked away..

.

BUDDA

I drove pass the Thobekgale Pharmaceutical company, I noticed this Tshepiso of a person, I know him from the newspaper articles that Shadow gave me. The articles had his pictures. He was walking with a little girl, he was holding her hand and she was busy talking and jumping around. Whatever she was saying must've been funny because the corners of his mouth would move.

46

SNOWY

After work the driver picked me up and we went to get Layla too from Thobekgale's office because he was going to stay for a few hours to catch up on a few things and I didn't want Layla to stand in his way, he has helped me enough with her for today. I would've prepared a delicious dinner but since we going to his Father's house for dinner I decided not to cook..
Layla was watching Tv and I had just prepared myself, I was wearing a long summer dress with sandals. The dress was a boob tube and it really covered my breasts well, I was worried that it

was going to pop out a cleavage or something but it didn't. I really didn't know what to wear but I know that first impressions last and Vic being a billionaire that he is, I really hope that he will accept me and see me for who I am and not what my past did to me. With that I mean in reference with the mistakes I have made after Budda took advantage of me. I was on the phone with Okuhle, unfortunately she didn't get the job. She was really sad and disappointed, I was sad too.

Me: I didn't even know that you were looking for a job

Her: I need to get up and get my own I cannot be dependent on your Father and you forever

Me: We don't mind.. You know I would do anything for you

Her: I know that very well and I don't want you feeling as if like you owe me because I took care of Layla for you, you also took care of me when I was young and protected me

Me: Yeah I didn't protect you enough though

Her: Don't beat yourself about it

I took the glass of wine and went to sit with Layla on the couch..

Her: Anyway how did you cope with Layla?

Me: Thobekgale babysat for me

Her: That's sweet.. He is really sweet underneath all that bad boy

I laughed..

Her: Where is Layla?

Me: She's right next to me you can talk to her

Her: Okay Babe

I gave Layla the phone..

Me: You wanna talk to Khukhu?

Her: Ya (nodding)

I gave her the phone and kissed her on her forehead..

I took the my glass and went see Naledi in her room I think I have to talk to her because she has been in a very bad mood ever since Layla and I got home

I knocked a few times before I heard a "Come in"

I walked in and then closed the door, she was laying on the bed with her headsets on..

Me : Can I talk to you?

She ignored me. I went and sat down next to her and shook her a little..

Me: Can I talk to you?

She looked very annoyed when she removed the headsets, she even rolled her eyes but I let it go.

Me: Can I talk to you? Serious talk and kill giving me an attitude

She kept quiet..

Me: I shouldn't be doing this I don't wanna do it but I'm forced too because we both share someone who means the world to us and that is your Father, well honestly he means the world to you because you will always be here unlike me

That caught a bit of her attention..

Me: Look, your relationship with your Father cannot be ruined by anything. Your relationship with him is "until death do us apart" that's the only time you and him will never keep in physical communication nor spend time with each other anymore

I exhaled...

Me: Your Father loves you and I'm not here to break that bond between you too, he will never put anyone else beyond you. You are his number one and you will forever remain his number one, all I'm here for is to be a part of your world that's all. I am not taking him away from you that you need to understand

I put the glass of wine on the floor..

Her: You don't realize how blessed you are I wish at your age I had a father figure like him who would've protected me from all evil. When I was young I was repeatedly raped by my stepfather, when I was your age I ran away from home to live in the streets

Her eyes widened..

Me: Yes I did and life was not easy, not especially if you are a girl the streets can be cruel to you but all in all I am here today and I am making up for my mistakes, I am trying to work on my relationship with my Daughter whom I just met currently. I am given a second chance in life and I wanna use that chance to do good, to fix my life.

She remained quiet..

Me: I am not here to replace your Mom, I am not here to be your Mom. I want us to respect each other and get to know each other, Me and your Father we love each other very much and we want you to be a part of that love and happiness

I stood up...

Me: We going over to your Grandfather's house for dinner it would be lovely if you would come along too with us, and...

I looked around..

Me: I'm sorry that I let my Daughter sleep here without your permission I hope we won't be getting invading your space.. We going to be here for a while your Father thought it would be nice if we all got to know each other

She still kept her silence..

Me: I would never mistreat you I love your father and since you mean a lot to him I will love you too and treat you the same way that I will treat my Daughter Layla, I will reprimand you if you wrong, I will yell and everything but I will never mistreat you in any way that you need to know I made my way to the door..

Me: I just hope that you will give us a chance

I then walked out..

.

.

TSHEPISO

I looked at the time and I knew that I was supposed to be out of here an hour ago, I was running very late..

I stood up and collected the documents on my table when I saw someone standing at the door, it was Shadow..

Him: Relax I came here in peace

He made his way in..

Me: How did you get in?

Him: I lied my way to your office

Me: What do you want?

Him: I am here because I think that we should talk about something serious

Me: What exactly can we talk about?

I folded my arms..

Me: You and I we have nothing to talk about!

Him: We do..

Me: What the fuck do you want I have to be on my way h..

Him: Budda is out

I looked at him trying to comprehend what he was saying..

Him: He is coming for Snowy

Me: Why should I believe you?

Him: Because I wouldn't waste my time and petrol coming here especially in such a humble manner we're not friends.

He had a point..

Him: Look I know that you and I have our differences but Snowy is my Baby Mama and I would hate if something could happen to her. She has been through the most, but most of all I don't want my Daughter losing her Mother while they have just found each other.. Since I cannot protect them because Budda is my General I am going to ask you to do that even if it means killing me

He rolled up his sleeve revealing the number "28" tattoo..

Him: This is my vow of loyalty if I betray them they will kill me

Me: You are more vulnerable when you inside

Him: Exactly and I am an ex con, one mistake I'll go back inside and probably never come back. Listen to me if you going to do anything hectic do not play in his territory because once you inside no one will protect you and no amount of money can protect you from the 28s not if you are an enemy

Me: How do I know that this is not a set up?

Him: We talking about my Daughter here.. Just as how you would protect yours is how I'm willing to protect mine too

Me: Then I need you to do me a favour

Him: Anything

Me: Then you have to protect my ex wife too I wouldn't want my Daughter growing up with that type of pain of losing her Mother

He nodded..

Him: Protect mine and I will protect yours

I nodded...

He extended his hand to me..

Him: Truce?

I looked at his hand and extended mine to his..

Me: Truce

We shook hands and then he walked out. I will never trust Shadow so from hereon I will keep tabs on him and his fucken crew...

.

.

SNOWY

Thobekgale was running very late and his phone was off, Layla was even falling asleep and I had gone tipsy from the wine. Naledi walked in as I was trying her Dad for the last time..

Her: You forgot your glass

I looked at it..

Me: I wondered where I had left it.. Thank you

She put it on the counter..

Her: Is that your Daughter passed out on the couch?

Me: Yes

(Silence)

Her: She's very cute

Me: Thank you

Her: Do you think there's time for me to prepare myself?

Me: Your Dad is not here so you can go and freshen up real quick

She walked away..

Her: Snowy...

Me: Yes?

Her: Thank you

Me: For?

Her: For making him happy

Me: You welcome

She slightly smiled and then left the room..

47

THOBEKGALE

I was delayed by making a few calls if Shadow is right then Nono's life (Snowy) is in danger, I couldn't afford to have him be her worst nightmare she has come very far to be broken like that again. When I got to the flat it was very quiet, I made my way to the main bedroom and it was

empty. I put my things on the bed and made my way to Naledi's room they were all sleeping on her bed. I took a picture and uploaded it on WhatsApp, making it my profile picture.. I went and got Snowy, I gently picked her up but since my Daughter is a light sleeper she opened her eyes..

Her: Daddy

Me: Shhhh.. I'll be right back (Whispering)

Snowy was gone she couldn't even feel when I carried her to the bedroom, I gently placed her on the bed and covered her with a duvet. She was wearing a dress my first time seeing her in a dress, she really wanted to impress. I kissed her on her cheek and then went out of the bedroom, Naledi made her way to the kitchen..

Her: We waited for you

She sat on the high chair..

Me: Ya I got delayed so we will go to Grandpa's on Saturday

She nodded..

I noticed the empty bottle of wine..

Me: What happened?

Her: Snowy went a little bit overboard with the wine then she started telling me and Layla about how she grew up, she got emotional and then passed out on my bed. Layla and I stayed up a bit playing games on my laptop until we passed out too

This was news to me, I think she was trying to tell me that all 3 of them got along very well without me being around..

Her: Here let me show you something

She got down from the chair and went to her bedroom, I was still confused. I was very confused.. She came back with a paper..

Her: Look

I took it and checked it, it was a Mathematics test script. She got 85/100..

Me: Good job

Her: I wanted at least 90

Me: Grade 10 is not a joke

Her: I think I should get a tutor

Me: I think you doing great if it was a 60 then we would get a tutor

I gave her the script..

Me: You seem to be getting along very well with Snowy and Layla

Her: Snowy is really great, just a bit crazy but she's great I like her.. Don't tell her though

I chuckled..

Me: I won't

Her: You want Ice cream?

Me: Yeah why not

She went to the fridge..

Me: Let me ask you something

Her: Okay

Me: How would you feel if Snowy and I could have a child together?

Her: Me and Layla we not enough?

Me: Snowy and I we need to have our own child together plus in a few years You will be going to Varsity and Layla I'm sure she will spend more time with your Mom and Uncle Shadow

Her: Why?

Me: Because Layla is Uncle Shadow's Daughter

Her eyes almost popped out from her socket..

Me: Unusual I know

Her: Are you guys also planning on getting married?

Me: I don't know... Only time will tell

She nodded..

Me: You growing up and I'm really proud of you, you handle situations very well

She kept quiet..

Me: Why are you handling such a situation very well?

Her: I don't want you to be lonely and sad

Me: Lonely?

Her: Like you said in a few years time I'll be going to varsity

Me: Ya you have two years to go

Her: Here is your ice cream

Me: What is going on with you?

Her: Nothing

I gave her a weird look..

Her: I would like to go to a boarding school

Me: Why?

Her: My best friend is going there next term I think it would be good too if I go there

Me: That's odd

Her: So?

Me: I don't know I'll think about it

Her: Okay

That was very odd..

.

.

KRESI

I looked at his profile picture again and something deep inside of me moved..

Nissi: When is Shadow going to fetch you?

I ignored..

Her: Kresi?

I looked at her..

Her: Are you alright?

Me: Look at this

I showed her the profile pic..

Her: Awww that's very sweet

Me: Sweet? It seems like I can't get away from this woman!

Her: I don't understand

Me: She probably is the one who convinced me not to come anymore

Her: I don't understand why you came.. This dinner was for Snowy to meet Vic

Me: Excuse me if you didn't know I have a Daughter with Tshepi obviously I'm going to be in their lives for a very long time, I am part of this family

I shook my head..

Her: Thank Goodness I'm going home tomorrow

Me: If it's not Shadow talking about her at home it's Tshepi! She's not a goddesses and she ain't even all that

She laughed..

Me: I am not going to let this woman steal my child from me

Her: Well then good luck.. All I'm going to say is don't mess with Tpee

Me: Tshepi..

Me: No I mean Tpee

My phone vibrated it was a message from Shadow:

"I'm outside"

Me: I have to go.. Travel safe tomorrow

I went and hugged her..

Her: I'll call you so we can discuss my wedding decor and everything

Me: Okay I'll wait for your call

Her: And don't do anything stupid you might lose Naledi forever and You know how Tshepi is..

Be careful

.
.
BUDDA

A loud knock at the door woke me up, I got up from the couch and I saw some lights. I had no doubt it was the police. I went to the kitchen, switched on the light and then went to open the door..

Police 1: Good evening Sir

Me: Evening

I let them in..

Police 2: Is this the home of Katherine Nene?

Me: Yes..

Police 2: Do you know her?

Me: Yes she is my wife

Police 1: When was the last time you saw her?

Me: It's been a day or so

Police 2: A day or so?

Me: I'm sorry officers of the Law but..

Police 1: A body was found in the bush not far from here, we believe it's your wife

Me: What?

They handed me her ID..

Police 1: This was found in her handbag which was a bit far from her body, her purse was missing but the person left her ID and her credit card

Me: Are you sure that it's my wife?

Police 2: You can come and ID her body

Police 1: Why you never reported her missing?

Me: We had a fight when she left home that morning.. I thought she was still mad and probably slept over at a friend's place

Police 1: A friend's place?

Me: Yes

The other police looked around..

Police 1: Why do you have those tattoos?

Me: Is it a crime to have tattoos?

He grabbed my arm and looked at them..

Police 1: "28"

He looked at me..

Police 1: Would you mind coming down to the station with us?

The other Police searched through..

Me: Officer I think you need a warrant to search the house?

Police 1: Are you an Ex con?

Me: Yes.. Out on Parole

Police 2: Do you live alone?

Me: No this is my Mother in law's house

Police 1: Would you mind coming down to the station with us for some interrogation? And maybe a polygraph test?

A polygraph test? That's not what I wanted to hear..

Police 1: You can put on some pants and come with us

This was not right..

48

BUDDA

Me: If I may ask? For how long am I going to be kept in here for? I didn't do anything wrong I was with another Detective in the interrogation room, it wasn't one of those officers that got me

from my house..

Detective: Do you have an Alibi? The night your wife went missing?

Me: Yes I was at home with a friend you can call him and confirm

He passed me a pad and a pen..

Him: You can write his number and address we will definitely check with him

Me: I don't know his address I'll give you his name and number

I wrote Shadow's real name and his number then handed it back to him...

Him: Keegan?

Me: Yes that's his name but they call him Shadow I don't know why

He nodded..

Me: Anything else?

Him: We would like you to take a lie detector test

Me: If I refuse?

Him: Then that means you have something to hide

Me: Detective am I guilty? If I'm guilty please lock me up if I'm not can I go home? It's late

He looked at me for a while..

Him: We cannot force you to get take a lie detector test but I will get a warrant to search your house

Me: Be my guest

I stood up..

Me: Thank you Detective

I made my way out..

.

.

SNOWY

Thirst woke me up from my peaceful sleep, I checked the time on my phone and it was 01:00am. I raised my head up from the pillow and I had a headache, that's what I hate about wine. The after effects are draining, especially dry red. I was in the main bedroom the last time I remember we were in Naledi's room. I checked his side of the bed and it was empty, that's very unusual. I got out of bed and went to the bathroom, I peed then washed my face and rinsed my mouth. I then made my way to the kids room, they were peacefully sleeping. I closed the door gently and followed the light that led me to the kitchen, he was sitting on one of the high chairs with his laptop on the counter. I stood at the door and looked at him, whatever it was must be important because he was concentrating on it. I turned on the light and he closed his laptop..

Him: What time is it?

Me: 01:00am

I made my way to him..

Him: I didn't realize

He helped me to sit ontop of him...

He kissed me at the back of my neck..

I tried opening his laptop but he closed it..

Him: Don't..

Me: What were you doing?

Him: Working

His chin was resting on my shoulder, his hands were squeezing my breasts..

Me: We waited for you

Him: I know.. I'm sorry

He kissed me on my neck..

Me: You should've called at least to let us know that you...

Him: Dammit Snowy I said I was sorry!

My heart skipped a beat, I don't want us to get into a fight with the kids sleeping right across us.

The last time we fought it turned ugly, I don't want it to turn ugly again..

Me: I'll drink some panado and go to bed, I was here to drink some Panado

I got down and went to the cupboard, it was too high I couldn't reach. Short girl problems..
I turned and looked at him, he looked at me..
I looked around and there was nothing I could stand on that can help me reach for the Panado tablets..

Me: Can you please get them for me?

Him: No..

Me: but I'm asking nicely

Him: I don't want

Me: Okay then good night

I made my way to the bedroom while passing him and he grabbed me by my waist pulling me back..

Him: I'm joking I'll get them for you

He went and got them for me..

Me: Thank you

I drank two...

Me: Ohw I forgot to tell you something

Him: What?

Me: The earrings you got me.. I lost them at work

He looked at me and said nothing..

Me: Sorry I will replace them.. They R500 right?

Him: Yeah they R500

Me: Okay

He clenched his teeth, I stood there as he opened his laptop. He closed it again then closed his eyes..

Him: How did you lose them again?

Me: I don't really remember but I'll replace them

He kept quiet..

Me: How much are they Thobekgale? I know they not R500

(Silence)

Him: 8 000

Me: I thought we talked about this..

Him: Nono I'm not going to buy you something that's cheap... That's not me

Me: I don't need you to buy me anything I have a job I can buy myself things I don't want you calling me a gold digger and what not, I can af..

Him: Snowy..

Me: No it's not right what you doing because tomorrow you going to..

He came to me and kissed me to shut me up..

He picked me up and then we went to the bedroom..

Him: I thought you were never going to shut up

.

.

KRESI

Shadow woke up very early this morning, I prepared breakfast for him..

Him: Thank you

He kissed me on my cheek..

Me: You welcome

He took the newspaper..

Me: So when are you fetching Layla?

Him: I have to call Snowy first

Me: So you guys call each other?

Him: No we don't

Me: But you just said you going to call her..

Him: Yes I will

Me: I don't think I'm comfortable with that

He put the newspaper down and looked at me..

Him: You obsessed with Snowy

Me: I'm not she's just in my life.. You have a baby with her my ex husband is dating her

Him: This is getting boring.. We can't even have a peaceful breakfast, I'll get something from the Cafe

Me: Ohw wow..

He grabbed his keys and walked up to the door..

Me: Try La Buela restaurant your baby Mama will serve you

He gave me the middle finger..

.

.

SNOWY

Thobekgale went with Naledi and Layla, he was gonna drop off Naledi first at school and then drop Layla off at home so that Okuhle can babysit. The company driver is supposed to drive me to work today but first we have to go to clicks so that I can get an emergency pill. I was greatly worried about Thobekgale, he is portraying a different side to me I don't know him like this he is becoming a mystery...

Last night he was just irritated and very rude, after we had sex he was better. Now I wish that I had spoken to Nissi..

The car stopped at the red light and I checked the time, I was running a bit late. Out of nowhere some car just came speeding and hit my side knocking us off the road. It just was very weird how the driver showed up from nowhere and specifically chose our car to collide with...

.

.

THOBEKGALE

I was standing at my office window starring at the view, ever since I got here I have postponed every meeting I had this morning..

I heard a knock at the door..

Maurice: Eyy

I let a few seconds passed before turning around and facing him..

Me: Is it done?

I turned around and looked at him..

Him: Yes

Me: How bad was it?

Him: I'm not sure

I walked up to my table..

Him: A car accident is not something to toy with, she could be badly injured or worse she could die

Me: For your sake I hope she doesn't

Him: Have you noticed something?

Me: What?

Him: You turning into Tpee he is surfacing

Me: Or maybe he never left..

49

SNOWY

A slight cold breeze hit my face, I could hear the sound of an aircon but it wasn't too loud to irritate your eardrums. I opened my eyes and my vision was blurry for a few seconds, I then regained my full eyesight. I looked around and the room was pure white, I was laying on a small bed. I looked at myself and I was wearing an all white outfit, I had marks on my arms. Those kind of marks that prepare you for surgery..

I got up from the bed and my left knee was very painful, I limped my way around. This was no hospital it was just a mere room and I didn't know how I ended up here. I went to the big window on the wall, I couldn't see on the other side it was more like a mirror I could clearly see myself. Not only did I have the marks on my arms but also on my face with a little bump on my forehead, what exactly is happening?

I started hitting the window..

Me: Let me out of here!!! Hello? Hello?

I started to panic because I didn't know where I was and what was happening..

It was so white that I couldn't even point the door, I was trapped here..

.

BUDDA

My Mother in law came home to the news of her Daughter's sudden passing, it really hit her hard when I told her that she broke down and cried. She was broken..

Her: The only child and family that I am left with.. Ohh Nkosi yam'

I kept quiet..

Her: We do have such crime around here but it mostly happens on young girls and kids when they get kidnapped, my Daughter was old who would do such a thing to her?

Me: Maybe they wanted her purse or bag and restrained

She shook her head no..

Her: What was she doing out at night?

Me: It's actually my fault.. We had an argument that morning when she left for work I think she didn't wanna come back home

Tears streamed down her cheeks..

Me: I'm sorry

Her: Its not your Fault.. It.. I.. My goodness who would do this to my Daughter? Almost everyone around here knows us

Me: I promise you that I will find the person who did this.. I won't rest until the person is brought into justice

Her: Please don't do anything stupid...You're still on probation

Me: It's my wife.. Someone robbed me of my wife

She took out her phone, her hand was shaking..

Her: I have to call Okuhle..

Me: Allow me..

Her: I don't think she will wanna talk to you

Me: She is my Daughter Ma.. I think Okuhle was influenced by Snowy, I would never touch my own blood I cannot be that cruel

She gave me her phone..

Me: I think you should go and lie down a bit, I'll make you a cup of tea and then we will discuss everything later on.. I'm sure you tired

She wiped her tears with her mini blanket that was over her shoulders..

She stood up and I helped her, I walked her to the Bedroom..

.

OKUHLE

Earlier today in the morning when Layla came I made her a sandwich, her favourite and orange juice. She ate and then started complaining about a tummy ache, she has been sleeping ever since and now she has a fever. I have been calling Snowy to let her know about this so that we can take her to the Dr but her phone just rings and then takes me straight to voicemail...

Me: Snowy it's about Layla.. Please call me

I threw my phone on the couch. I don't have money if I did I would've driven her to the Dr. I am financially dependent on Snowy and her Father, I really don't like it hence I've been trying to get a job but it's dark in the employment section. I can't find a job that I'm even thinking of selling my

car, I really need to be independent. My phone rang, I took it and looked at the caller ID. It was my Grandmother...

I let it ring for a while before answering it..

Me: Hello?

There was no answer on the other end..

Me: Hello?

I heard someone breathing..

Me: Grams?

Voice: Kuhle it's me..

I almost dropped my phone.. My heart started racing.

I walked to the door and locked it..

Him: Kuhle are you still there?

I went to the window and checked for any car or any unsavory character on the street..

Him: Kuhle please say something

Me: Wha.. What do you want?

Him: I call you beca..

Me: Stay away from me

I hung up and went to the bedroom to check on Layla, she was still sleeping..

.

.

TSHEPISO

There only way that I could protect Snowy from her monstrous step father is for me to know where she at all times. I thought of bugging her phone but they can easily throw it away if they get her, so the reason for this accident and "kidnapping" was that a few days ago I researched how I can protect her even if I'm not with her and I stumbled upon an interesting theory.

Surgeons overseas have found a way to put a tracking chip inside the human body, anywhere inside the body so that you can be able to track that person. They mostly put it in the arm, the neck, the leg, and other places. It's a very small chip that has less side effects. It's a procedure that has not yet been introduced in South Africa so I had to spend a lot of money to get the surgeon who came with this idea, to come here in South Africa and do it on Snowy. Snowy doesn't know that her step father has been released, if I spoke to her about it she was going to be very paranoid I don't want her to live in fear..

I drove up to the secret location where they were keeping her to check how everything was going, I stood with the surgeon on the other side and we looked at her. My heart broke into a million pieces seeing her that scared and with a couple of bruises from the accident..

Surgeon: Don't worry she cannot see us nor hear us

Me: How long is the procedure going to take?

Surgeon: By tomorrow I'll have the chip and I will be able to insert it at the back of her neck..
Would you like to see how it will work?

Me: Yes please

He led me to his computer..

My phone rang..

Me: Sorry I have to take this

It was Maurice..

Me: Maurice

Him: The company driver is sticking to one story

Me: That is?

Him: He picked her up she rambled about getting something at clicks, at the pharmacy. They were on their way there when a car knocked them off the road

Me: Clicks pharmacy?

Him: Yes and the other driver is going to recover

Me: That's good

Him: It's going to be a lengthy and expensive case

Me: We stick to the plan.. He had a seizure while driving and lost control of the car he is epileptic
Him: Ya People with epilepsy are not allowed to drive
Me: Think something Maurice! I cannot always be the one with ideas
Him: Why are you doing this?
Me: I have to go just fix it
I hung up and thought for a while..
Me: Clicks pharmacy???
(After 30 seconds)
Me: Yeah Emergency pill
I went back in..
Surgeon: You can come and see
Me: Can I ask you something?
Him: Yes?
Me: If a woman had unprotected sex how soon should she take the emergency pill?
Him: That's not exactly my field but I believe it should be taken within 72 hours
I walked over to the glass and looked at Snowy..
Me: Change of plans I want her to be kept here for at least a week or so
Him: That was not the plan
Me: Then I'm making it a plan
Him: Does that have to do with what you just asked me?
I kept quiet..
Him: Her body is too much in distress, her stress levels are high, too much imbalance of hormones I think her body will reject implantation.. I don't think in this state that she's in she will be able to..
Me: She will.. She's much stronger than you think
I turned and looked at him..
Me: I want her to be treated well, I want her monitored, she has to eat 3 times a day
Him: This was not the plan..
Me: As I have said... We are making it the plan
I put my hand on his shoulder..
Me: Make it happen

50

OKUHLE

I ended up calling Sam because Layla's temperature was getting worse, He came home and drove us to the Dr. I have been trying Snowy but still the result was the same, it would ring and then take me straight to voicemail. I was getting very worried..

Sam: Did you try Snowy again?

Me: Yes I did, but still voicemail

Him: Maybe we should call the boyfriend

Me: I'll call him when we done here

Him: I knew that this guy was bad news from the very beginning, Snowy and Layla visit him and now Snowy is not answering her phone and Layla is sick

The reason receptionist told us that we can go to the consulting room, We made our way there..

.

.

THOBEKGALE

I closely looked at her as she glanced at the plate and pushed it away, she then hugged her knees..

I exhaled..

The door opened and the Dr walked in..

Him: The chip has been delivered

He showed it to me..

Me: Will this be safe?

Him: In my country we have done this procedure a lot especially on women since they're most prone to danger, it helped the cops track down any woman who was reported missing and it saved many although some were already found dead

I looked at it and it was very small..

Him: You must really love this lady

Me: What makes you say that?

Him: You searched for me then flew me from my country and you paying me a lot of money for this procedure

Me: I do love her and I want her to be safe at all times, I cannot risk her life

Him: Tomorrow I will insert the chip at the back of her neck

Me: That's good

Him: I would like to leave after the procedure.. I don't want to be arrested in a foreign country for kidnapping

I chuckled..

Me: Trust me that won't happen

Him: We can release her and the pregnancy thing will take place at the comfort and safety of her home

I shook my head no..

Me: She might remember and wanna get the pill

Him: I think she will be a bit traumatized to remember that

I put my hand on his shoulder..

Me: We will do this my way

My phone rang only once, I checked and it was Okuhle..

Me: I have to go somewhere I'll check on you guys tomorrow

I looked at her..

Me: Make sure she eats

Him: I'll try

I made my way out..

.

.

OKUHLE

Unfortunately Layla had to be admitted, The Dr called an Ambulance and we went to the hospital. I was in the Ambulance with her and Sam followed us with his car. The Dr was very sure that Layla might be coming down with meningitis, he had taken a blood sample and wrote a referral to present at the hospital so that they can do more tests including a lumbar puncture.

Her symptoms were getting worse she was vomiting now and having a serious headache, was almost as if like she was slipping into a coma. She wasn't responsive at all..

I was very worried now this symptoms just came from nowhere, one moment she was fine the next she is very sick..

Sam: She will be fine

Me: I hope so

I was pacing up and down..

Sam: I'll try Snowy again

He walked out to call Snowy..

.

.

SNOWY

If I knew how to pray I would pray but praying has never been my thing, I don't even believe that there's a God. I have suffered enough in my life to know that God doesn't really like me if he exists. I lifted my head up and wiped my tears, this cannot be happening to me not when I have just found my happiness. Layla, Okuhle, my Dad, and Thobekgale. I cried more when I thought of

them, will I ever see them again? What are these people going to do with me? Where am I? What's happening? I had so many questions and zero answers..

I got up and went to the window and started banging on it..

Me: Let me out of here please (Shouting)

I banged even more..

Me: Let me out of here!!! Please I have a daughter.. What do you want from me? (Crying)

I sank down on the floor crying..

.

THOBEKGALE

I called Okuhle and she told me that Layla was admitted, she was speaking very fast I couldn't hear much of what she was saying but I did get the name of the Hospital so I rushed there. It took me at least one hour to get there, I made my way in and spotted Okuhle in the waiting area..

Me: Hey

She looked like she had been crying..

Her: Hi

Me: What's wrong?

Her: I don't know what happened one minute she was complaining that she's sick then the next we here..

Me: Even when I dropped her off this morning I saw that she wasn't well

Her: I thought it was the sandwich I made for her.. I really don't know what's going on, on the other hand Snowy is missing.. I.. I don't know what's happening (Crying)

I pulled her closer to me and hugged her..

Me: Shhhh it's okay... Everything is going to be okay

I saw Snowy's Father making his way to us, I let go of Okuhle..

Him: What are you doing here?

Me: Okuhle called me

He wasn't happy to see me..

Him: Leave!!

I looked at Okuhle..

Him: You said my girls were going to be fine with you, one is missing and one is admitted.. You get out of here boy!!

Okuhle: Sam..

Him: I don't want him here!!! I don't want him anywhere near my girls anymore! I knew that this boy was full of nonsense.. Go! Get out!!

He literally pushed me out..

Him: Go!! Go back to your rich life and leave us alone!

Me: Sir..

He punched me across the face and I took a step back, security came closer..

Him: Go!!!

If he wasn't my Father in law.. I would've did a number on him..

51

OKUHLE

5 DAYS LATER

I have been by Layla's side throughout this whole ordeal the results came back and indeed she was diagnosed with Meningitis. The Dr is still trying to find the cause, how did she get the bacteria into her bloodstream and that if it was caught early then antibiotics would've helped.

Thobekgale has been very supportive he even had Layla moved to a private and expensive hospital, he is now trying to get us a good surgeon to come and attend to the situation because

of how fatal meningitis is. Sam still had a problem with Thobekgale but then he was laid back for the sake of Layla, since she changed hospitals she has been a bit better. Thobekgale is trying to find a way to help Layla without her having to do a surgery, she's still young for that traumatic experience and worse Snowy is still missing and Layla has been asking about her..

Thobekgale: You should go home and rest, you cannot be here for Layla if you're tired yourself I looked at her, she was playing a game with Naledi on Naledi's phone. They are very close someone who doesn't know them would think that they are blood sisters..

Me: I don't wanna leave her alone.. She's going to get scared

Him: Naledi and I we will be here with her, you can go home take a bath, eat and then rest a little

Me: Have you heard anything about Snowy?

Him: Unfortunately not we are still searching

Me: This is a nightmare

Him: I'll find your Sister

Me: What if Budda took her?

Him: He wouldn't dare if he knows what's good for him

I exhaled and looked at Layla..

Me: She seems so happy she doesn't even know what's happening

Him: I have contacted at least 3 surgeons waiting for one of them to respond to my email they have dealt with Meningitis before and their patients have survived at least 30% of them that's something

Me: Thank you.. Thank you very much, Snowy is blessed to have you

Him: It might be the other way round.. Come on you have to go home I'll call a driver for you

Me: Thank you again

Him: You welcome

Me: I'll go and say goodbye to her

I walked back into the ward..

Layla: Naledi look..

Naledi: Wow that's a beautiful dress

They were playing some dress up game..

Layla: Khukhu look

Me: That looks nice

Naledi: Are you okay?

Me: Ya just wanna go home and rest a little.. I'll come back tomorrow morning

Naledi nodded..

I held Layla's hand..

Me: Hey Khukhu is coming back neh?

She nodded..

Naledi: I don't think she even heard you

Me: It's okay

I kissed her on her forehead..

Me: I love you

She ignored me and continued playing games. Her ward was filled with teddy bears and balloons, she had her Hello kitty black and pink duvet. It felt like she's at home..

.

.

SNOWY

"La Beula Restaurant"

Those words looked familiar and the place looked familiar too. I walked to the door and opened, I walked in and closed the door most eyes quickly landed on me. I was in a hospital gown and I felt like shit, I don't know what happened but I was dropped off in the middle of a quiet street not far from the restaurant. I walked while looking around, the sounds made me feel dizzy, the looks that I was being given made my skin to crawl..

I walked up to the counter, A blonde was standing there busy with some file..

Me: Hi
She looked at me and her eyes widened..
Her: Snowy????
She came all the way around to hug me..
Her: We have been so worried about you girl are you okay?
Me: I..
She looked at me..
Her: Ohh my you look terrible, what happened to you?
Me: I don't recall but I feel very confused and dehydrated
She looked around..
Her: Come
She held my hand and we made our way to some office..
She knocked then opened, we walked in..
Her: Beula look who's here?
He looked at me and got up from his chair..
Him: Snowy?
I sat down..
He looked at the Blonde..
Her: She just walked in
Me: May I have some water?
Her: I'll get some for you
Buela: Did you call the cops?
Me: No.. No cops.. I want you to call.. I..
Buela: Your Dad? Sabby? Ambulance?
Me: No I want you to call Thobekgale
Beula looked at the Blonde..
Him: Get the water
Her: Yes Sir
She walked out..
He sat down and looked at me...
Him: What happened to you?
Me: I don't know but I was kept somewhere and things were done to me..
I put my hand on my forehead..
Me: They confused me a lot
Him: Who?
Me: I don't know them
Him: Are you okay?
Me: I feel a bit sick
Him: Okay I'll call Thobekgale for you
Me: Thank you

.
.

BUDDA

My wife's funeral is tomorrow so far we have mourned the whole week without Okuhle and Snowy, a few family members were busy asking about them. I wanted to go to Sam's house to get the kids but my Mother in law stopped me, she told me that going there might turn into a big fight. I respect her a lot and I respect the fact that she's mourning so I restrained from going there..

I was with Shadow he's supposed to give me money so that I can buy a cow and rent 2 buses. My Mother in law's funeral palour only provided a casket, a hearse, two family cars, tent & chairs, and grocery. The rest I have to cover. I'm broke I haven't been making any money since I got back from jail, shadow had to borrow me a few bucks so that I don't get embarrassed in front of my in laws..

Shadow: This is a lot of money that I'm giving you

Me: I know and I'll pay back all of it

Shadow: You better

There's something I don't understand about Shadow, he has been acting a bit strange. He is no longer submissive and he is not shaken by the fact that I am the general in charge. He no longer follows instructions..

Me: We will start with the cow and then the two buses

Him: Isn't it even a bit late? The funeral is tomorrow

Me: We will make a plan

(Silence)

Me: I want us to pass by at Snowy's place

Him: Why?

Me: They need to know that tomorrow we burying their Mother

Him: I think that's a bad idea

Me: I didn't ask if it was a good idea or not.. We are going to pass by there

Him: What if their Father is there?

Me: He is at work.. I checked

I looked at him..

Me: Any problems?

Him: None at all

Me: Good!

.

.

SNOWY

I really didn't know what happened to me, I don't know what they did to me but all I know is that what they did hurt me. I keep on getting headaches, I get dizzy, and at times I vomit. I even get very confused that I don't remember some things, it's really a painful feeling..

The door opened and Thobekgale walked in..

He came straight to me, he pulled the chair next to me and sat down. He looked at me without saying anything..

Buela: She just walked in here in this state

He put his hand on my cheek, I felt the warmth in my chest and stomach. It was assurity that I am now safe. I put my hand ontop of his..

Him: Are you okay?

Tears filled my eyes..

Me: I'm okay

Him: I was very worried about you.. We have been looking for you

Buela: I think you should take her to the Hospital

Me: No.. I just wanna see Layla and Okuhle

Thobekgale: But Nono..

Me: I just wanna go home please.. I no longer trust hospitals it's Doctors who did this to me

He wiped my tears..

Him: It's okay let's go home..

He looked at Buela..

Thobekgale: Thank you

Buela: You welcome

Thobekgale took off his jacket and put it on me..

Him: Let's go home

Buela: I think you guys can use the back door to attract less attention

Thobekgale: That's a good idea

He helped me to get up..

Him: Will you be able to walk?

Me: I think so

I couldn't hold the tears back..

He pulled me closer to him and hugged me..

Me: I thought I was never going to see You or Layla, or Okuhle again

Him: I would never let anything happen to you.. I'm sorry

I was safe, that's all that mattered..

52

SHADOW

We didn't go to Snowy's place as planned he received a call while we were on our way there and I drove him home, there was an emergency. Driving back I had time to think about this whole situation, I can put an end to this without Budda hurting anyone. My relationship with Snowy was never perfect and I never had a relationship with my Daughter at all, I cannot change what has happened in the past but I can give my Daughter and her Mother a better future one where Budda won't hurt them. One were they won't have to look over their shoulders all the time because they scared that someone will hurt them, I can protect them from harm..

I drove straight to the police station to talk to the Detective in charge of the homicide case, I was going to confess everything and while we were disposing the body I had the liberty to plant evidence. I put the belt that Shadow used to strangle her with around her neck but he didn't see. He thought that I had disposed the evidence but unfortunately not, I knew that I would need this evidence one day..

I was taken into the interrogation room, the Detective was smoking but he put down his cigarette. Budda is definitely going to get life in prison because he had violated his parole, and Me on the other hand I'll get charged for being an accomplice to murder, I might be given a harsh sentence but I don't really care this is all for my Daughter..

.

.

SNOWY

Okuhle was so happy to see me and I was so happy to see her too. What happened to me shook me a bit, I thought that I was never going to see her again. After shedding tears and endless hugs I took a well deserved bath, I wanted Thobekgale next to me so that I could feel safe. After bathing Okuhle made me something to eat, I haven't eaten for a while now and the food tasted really good. I had no appetite when I was locked in that place because my mind was somewhere else, my mind was mostly concentrated on me getting out of there alive. My heart sank down to my knees when I heard that my Baby was admitted, I asked to be driven there immediately. I wanted to be with her and by her side as she fights this sickness.

Her face lit up when she saw me walking in, Naledi seemed happy too. She came and hugged me..

Naledi: We were very worried about you

I put both my hands on her cheeks..

Me: I'm fine and thank you for worrying about me

I made my way to Layla and hugged her, it disturbed me seeing the IV next to her. That thick needle under her skin. She also had a Nasogastric intubation in her nose, she is too young to be going through this. I looked around..

Thobekgale: We wanted her to feel at home that's why her room is decorated like this

Me: Thank you

I held on to the bed as I felt like I was going to fall, Thobekgale came and held me..

Okuhle: Maybe you should go home and rest I'll stay with Layla

Me: No it's fine.. I wanna be here

Thobekgale: Let me drive Naledi home I'll be back..

Naledi: Can't I stay?

Thobekgale: No your Mom wants you home for the weekend

She took her bag all disappointed, Thobekgale helped me to sit on the chair. He crouched next to me and looked at me..

Him: Are you sure that you okay?

I smiled..

Me: I'm fine

He put his hand on my cheek..

Him: I'm not convinced

Me: I promise you I'm fine

Him: You don't want to see a Dr?

Me: No.. I'm fine

Him: I cannot lose you and lose Layla in the process

Me: We going to be okay.. I promise

He got up..

Him: Okay I'll see you guys later

Me: Okay

He kissed me on my forehead..

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

He went and kissed Layla too..

Naledi came to hug me again..

Her: I'll see you after the weekend

Me: Okay baby be good

Naledi: Bye Layla

Layla: Bye

Thobekgale looked at Okuhle..

Him: Can I talk to you?

Okuhle: Yeah sure

They all walked out leaving me and Layla in the ward. I held her hand..

Her: Are you going to leave again?

Me: No.. I'm not going anywhere

I got up from the chair and got in bed with her..

Me: I'm never going to leave you ever again

.

.

SHADOW

Detective: Take me through what happened that night

Me: He called me and said that he needed help and I drove there. I didn't think much of it until I got there and saw her laying on the floor by the sink with a belt around her neck. He told me that he killed her and that he wanted me to help him dispose the body

Him: What are you to him?

Me: We in the same gang.. The 28s I showed him my tattoo

Him: Loyalty runs deep in that gang.. Why should I trust you?

Me: Why would I lie? I can even take a polygraph test

He nodded...

Him: I believe you

He took a cigarette..

Him: Want one?

Me: I'm fine thank you

Him: We did find the belt and we also found a bit of blood under her nails and we took it for DNA testing so what's going to happen is that we will match it against your DNA and his to find the right killer

Me: You can do that

Him: Even if your blood wasn't found in the crime and what you telling me is correct, you will be indicted

Me: I understand

Him: You might even be given life since you not a first time offender and have a lot of previous charges

Me: I understand

Him: The judge will only have mercy on you if you testify against him

I exhaled..

Me: I'll do it

Him: You seem very cooperative.. Why are you doing this?

Me: I'm doing this because it's the right thing to do

Him: I see

Me: So what's going to happen now?

Him: We going to get him and if you right he is going down for a long time

Me: and me? What do I do in the meantime?

Him: We will make sure that nothing happens to you until you both appear infront of the judge

Me: I understand

Him: Right now I'm going to record you and you tell everything we going to use your testimony against him

Me: No problem

.

.

OKUHLE

I couldn't sleep peacefully, I kept on dating back to what happened. Okuhle was standing next to the window she seemed lost in her thoughts..

Me: Kuhle

She turned and looked at me..

Her: Thought you were sleeping

Me: I was..

She made her way to me..

Her: Mom passed on.. She was murdered

Me: What?

Her: Grams sent me a message a few minutes ago she's getting buried tomorrow

This was unbelievable..

Me: We will have to go to the funeral

Her: We can't...

Me: Kuhle she's our Mother..

Her: Budda is out, he called me.. We can't go there Snowy

53

KRESI

I was looking forward to spending time with my Daughter this weekend but when she was dropped off by her Father she didn't look happy at all to be home.

Naledi and I we have issues of our own Yes, but lately she is becoming worse she just doesn't want to be near me or spend time with me. I understand though I broke that Mother and Daughter trust by telling her Father thatshe slept with a boy at school, now I am suffering the consequences..

I stood at the doorway in the lounge and listened to them talking..

Naledi: I don't know why I can't spend time at home

Him: This is home.. You with me the whole week, your Mom wants to spend the whole weekend with you

Her: But I don't wanna spend the weekend with her, I enjoy the company of Snowy and Layla much more My heart sank, I felt rage building up inside of me..

Him: Naledi don't be like that.. Plus Snowy is going through a lot right now with the whole kidnapping and Layla being sick

Her: It's not like I'm gonna stress them

Him: I know but it would break your Mom's heart to know that you don't wanna spend time with her, she's your Mother and she loves you. You the only child she has.. Don't be like

I couldn't stand there and listen further because she was breaking my heart, I went to the kitchen and kept myself busy. Maybe if I could bake some muffins it would save my mind from thinking a lot. Naledi has known Snowy for what? 3 seconds? And already she's a better person in her life than I am? You need to understand something my jealousy, my pain, and anger comes from the fact that this woman came into our lives and already she has taken everyone from me. She is toxic and I don't think me and her will ever get along..

Tshepi made his way in..

Him: Are you okay?

Me: I'm fine

He leaned against the fridge with his arms folded..

Him: I know that when you start baking something is bothering you

Me: I am flattered that you still remember

Him: How are things going between you and Shadow?

Me: Fine

Him: Work?

Me: Why are you standing there bothering me?

Him: I'm just trying to find out if you still doing good

Me: Do you actually care?

He unfolded his arms..

Him: Think I should leave..

Me: I think we should talk about Naledi spending more time at your place

He stopped and looked at me..

Him: I thought we had a good arrangement

Me: She spends more time at your place than she does here.. I wanna spend more time with her before your girlfriend poisons her against me

He chuckled..

Him: Snowy doesn't have time for such petty things.. She's not like that

Me: You can make her look good all you want but..

We heard a knock at the door..

Him: I'll get it on my way out

He went and opened.. It was Shadow..

Shadow: Hey

Tshepi: Eyy

He walked in..

Shadow: didn't know you were here

Tshepi: I was dropping off Naledi

Him: Ohw.. Ya I should've called first don't wanna interrupt some mother and daughter time

Tshepi looked at me..

Him: I doubt you will

Shadow: While you still here I need to talk to you about something

Him: Ayt cool.. You can follow me to my car

They walked out.. I was stunned, since when do these two get along so well?

.

.

SNOWY

I had passed out on Layla's bed, it was my first time getting some peaceful sleep.. I opened my eyes and I was alone in the bed, I freaked out..

Me: Layla?

Nurse: Relax... She's in the play room with other kids

I sat up straight while yawning, she was standing against the small table filling out some file..

Her: You were sleeping for a while now

Me: I was tired I guess

Her: I noticed

Me: I'll go and check on Layla

Her: Not as yet the Dr will be here for you

Me: The Dr?

Her: We have to run some tests on you to make sure that you are fine

Me: I am fine

The Dr walked in..

Him: Good day

He walked in with Okuhle..

Me: What's going on?

Okuhle: The Dr is going to take a sample of your blood for testing to make sure that you weren't injected with harmful chemicals during the kidnapping

Me: Who ordered for this to be done? Because I am not approving it

Okuhle: Snowy please.. Do it for me and Layla we still need you

After what I went through, I am scared to face Doctors because I was locked up by one..

Okuhle came and sat next to me..

Her: Nothing is going to happen to you, I'm right here

She held my arm. I remembered those words, that's what I used to tell her when we were young. She used to be scared of the dark and monsters, I would always hold her hand and say "Nothing is going to happen to you, I'm right here"

Dr: We can start

I rolled up my sleeve..

Nurse: I'll go and get the syringe..

.

.

THOBEKGALE

I stood against my car..

Him: Heard Snowy has been found

Me: Yeah.. She's still a bit shaken but she'll be fine

He nodded..

Me: You wanted to talk to me about something?

Him: Yes.. Budda killed his wife and I helped him dispose the body

Me: You what?

Him: The body was found and it became a homicide case so I went and spoke to the Detective in charge of the case and confessed there's crucial evidence against him. His belt was found and they also have DNA, apparently she died fighting she scratched him

Me: Wait.. What are you saying?

Him: I might be busted too for being an accomplice but as long as Layla is safe I don't care what happens to me I didn't know what to think of this..

Him: I have no doubt that he's going to get life, he violated his parole
(Silence)

Me: I actually don't know what to say other than that I wanted to take this guy down on my own

Him: Here's what you don't understand.. Death would be easy on him, torturing him would also be easy we talking about someone who spent many years in jail someone who no longer has a conscience though prison is like a second home to him but everyone will be safe when he is away from the community

Me: The 28s are going to torture you inside once they know that you the one who snitched, they might even kill you.. Allow me to get you a good lawyer

He shook his head..

Him: As much as I would love to be in my Daughter's life but I don't want her to know me like that, I don't want her to know that I'm an ex-con. Her life will always be in danger because of my enemies, I'll be going in and out of jail she won't have a normal and I don't want her to have a part time Father or be ashamed of me I didn't know what to say..

Me: What about Kresi

Him: Man don't fuck with me

He took out a cigarette..

Him: That ex of yours still has issues she needs to work on herself first she's not over you as yet our relationship was no longer how it used to be, I hope this will make her realize that she has to appreciate the people in her life I understand what he was saying..

Him: Let me not keep you, I hope my Daughter will be more safe with you and have a normal life

Me: I will do everything in my powers to make sure that Layla has the best life.. Your sacrifice for your Daughter will not go in vain I promise

He extended his hand to me..

Him: Thank you

I shook his hand..

.

.

BUDDA

It was starting to get a bit full, neighbours came to help peel the vegetables I was still trying to get hold of Shadow so we can go and get the meat from the slaghuis. I had forfeited buying a cow, I was going to get a lot of beef and chicken there..

Me: Fuck Shadow pick up!!!!

I was inside the tent going round in circles my wife's body was on the way, my Mother in law actually stopped the neighbours from peeling the veges until the coffin has made it's way in so they were sitting in the tent having tea and scones..

To my surprise a police van parked on the other side, opposite out street and three police officers came in with the Detective in charge of my wife's case..

Everyone looked at them..

Me: Detective what are you doing here? This is not a good day please respect us we are mourning

Him: We are here to arrest you

Me: What?

Him: You are under arrest Sir for the murder of your wife.

The other two officers came and cuffed me..

Me: I didn't do anything... I'll even take your stupid polygraph tests!

Him: You have the right to remain silent..

Me: This shit is not happening.. This is not happening!!

54

SNOWY

ONE MONTH LATER

Layla was busy hitting the pot with a wooden spatula it made so much irritating noise..

Me: Layla stop it

She continued..

Me: Layla stop it, it's irritating my ears

She stopped..

She was discharged last week, the antibiotic suspension seemed to be working so the Dr agreed that we can take her home and see if she's going to have another episode. We were advised to wash fruits and vegetables thoroughly before giving them to her, and the Dr advised us on other things too what we should and shouldn't give her in her state..

Her: I'm bored

Me: I know baby

Her: Can't I go back to school?

Me: Unfortunately not anytime soon until we know that you are fine

Her: Okay

Me: I'll make us some oats

I went to open the cupboard to take out a box of oats when I accidentally hit my breast against the cupboard and I felt a lot of pain on my nipple..

Me: Ouch!

Layla: Mommy are you okay?

Me: Yes Baby Mommy is okay

When the Dr did the blood tests one came back positive for pregnancy, I had completely forgotten about the morning after pill prior to the kidnapping. I am not prepared to go to work as yet until I see that Layla's health is getting better and also that I have recovered from the kidnapping, I refused to see a therapist. I have been through worse and I learned to live through it all I am sure that I will learn to live through this. Since Thobekgale found out that I'm pregnant he has been overprotective but most of all very supportive, he even suggested that we get a house for me, Naledi, Layla, and him. Live as a family once and for all but we going to hear from my Dad. Since the kidnapping he has been overprotective on his side too.. I didn't attend my Mother's funeral even though I heard that Budda was arrested the previous day but I wasn't ready to face my Grandmother as yet, I haven't forgiven and forgotten she truly hurt me only Okuhle went to the funeral..

Layla: Mommy.. Mommy.. Mommy your phone is ringing

Me: Bringing it here

She was now in the lounge watching cartoons, she came and it gave to me..

Me: It's Uncle Thobekgale

I answered..

Me: Good morning

Him: Nono..

Me: How are you?

Him: I should be asking you that question, how is the morning sickness situation?

I laughed..

Me: It's unbearable

Him: Wanna see a Dr?

Me: I'm sure I'll get used to them as time goes on

Him: Are you sure?

Me: I'll tell you if it becomes worse

Him: How is Layla?

Me: She is fine just being too extra

Him: I am searching houses, found two so far

Me: Love you still have to talk to my Father about that

Him: And you still have to meet mine

Me: Looks like we still have a lot to do

Him: Let me talk to Layla

Me: Layla!!

She came running..

Me: Uncle Thobekgale wants to talk to you

I gave her the phone..

Thobekgale has been a good Father figure to Layla and I'm very grateful, Since Shadow got arrested he stepped and made sure that Layla still has a Father. I still don't understand how Shadow got involve in this mess of Budda killing my Mother but I don't care because she never mattered to me..

.

.

OKUHLE

A month ago the department of health sent out a lot of posts. Ward attendants, Cooks, cleaners, and Groundsman. I applied for all of them except for the Groundsman and I got the one for being a cook. I work different shifts every week and so far it's a very demanding job, there's a lot to do because the hospital is very big. I earn R7500 a month, next week is going to be my first pay on month end and I already have plans for it. Since Budda is no longer a threat it's time I start living my own life freely, I am planning to get my own place soon and just create a better future for myself. I did go to my Mother's funeral and I am at peace with her death. My Grandmother was very ashamed I think when Budda was arrested it clicked to her that he is not at all innocent and now she doesn't know how to deal with everything especially because she trusted him with all her heart, he was the perfect Son in law to her. Now she knows the truth about him and she doesn't know how to react..

.

.

SHADOW

Tpee did hire a lawyer for me and a very good one. We went to court on the first week of this month and the 3rd week again, in two weeks time the judge will give a verdict after going through the evidence. Budda is definitely not going to get away with this, the state lawyer crucified him. He proved that the belt belonged to him, and the DNA is also his so he is going to get life without parole. My lawyer said that my confession helped me a lot the judge might have mercy but even with my testimony it doesn't take away the fact that I helped Budda dispose the body and for that I will be crucified but I might look at 8 years with the possibility of parole. Budda and I we not sharing the same cell which makes things a bit better but we still see each other when we go outside and he cannot really attack me there because in this jail it's not the 28s that are in charge, it's the 27s and I happen to be sharing a cell with them. The only reason why they

haven't killed me is that they respect the fact that I went against the general and if I kill Budda I will get more respect from them. The 27s rule because it's a lot of them unlike at cape town, so the 28s are outnumbered. Starting a fight with them will be fatal..

55

THOBEKGALE

I met up with my Father at the house that the real estate agent wanted us to see. I had sent an Email after I saw the house on their website about 2 days ago ..

It was very convenient for our small family. Layla will have her own playroom and Naledi will have a bedroom with enough space for her things. I wanted the wall to be broken down that separates the master bedroom from the guestroom so that we can do a Nursery, when the baby cries we don't have to go far. In simple terms the Nursery will be combined with our bedroom but it will be very big for a newborn, either way it doesn't matter as long as the baby will be that much closer to us..

Me: So what do you think?

Dad: What's the price?

Agent: this one in particular will cost 2.5mill. It's in a very secure neighborhood, 4 bedrooms, 3 bathrooms, kit..

Dad: We saw all of that I just wanted to know the price

Agent: 2.5mill

Dad: I feel like the bedrooms aren't enough where are the guests going to sleep? Incase Siphokazi and I want to visit or her family since all of them will be occupied or changed into something else ?

Me: I know what you talking about

Agent: Well we have a bigger one it costs 3mill

Dad: I think we can go and see that one

Agent: It's actually not far from here

Dad: After you

She walked out first..

Dad: So when am I meeting her?

Me: I don't know I'll talk to her

Dad: I am not buying a house for someone I haven't met before

Me: You have met Me and Naledi

He laughed..

Him: Still I have to meet this woman

Me: Maybe tonight?

Him: Tomorrow night

My Father is buying us the house, he offered to buy it as his way to welcome Snowy into the family..

Dad: What car does she drive?

Me: She doesn't have

He stopped and looked at me..

Him: She doesn't have a car? So she's using public transportation? A taxi?

Me: No I usually drive her or sometimes I call the company driver

Him: Does she at least have a license?

Me: I believe she does

Him: You believe?

Me: Dad Snowy is different, all of this is going to overwhelm her

Him: She is carrying my Grandchild, she is going to be a part of us I believe for a very long time because you obviously feel strong about her and you telling me that all of this is overwhelming for her? Since when don't we take care of our women?

Me: She is way too different

Him: She is a woman and women deserve nice things

He started walking away..

Him: Trust me she will appreciate this all women like nice things

I exhaled and followed him, knowing Snowy like I do she's going to throw a fit..

.

.

OKUHLE

My feet were already painful and it wasn't even knocking off time, it was my lunch break. Today I'll be doing a long shift because we short staffed one of our cooks is sick, she won't be back until next week..

My newly found friend and I we usually go and buy food at the supermarket that's near to our workplace, it's inside the local complex which I don't know how it got a spot inside the complex it's opposite Shoprite. They the only two supermarkets inside the complex. I like it because it's clean, and their food is always fresh. I am talking about their cooked food, bread, cakes, cold meat, pies etc everything is fresh..

We were disappointed to find that it was full..

Me: We only have one hour and look at the queues

Ntombi: I'll get the food you get the drinks

Me: Red bull?

Her: Ya I'll take that.. I'm tired today

Me: Get me samp and their beef stew not more than R25

Her: Okay be quick so you can join the queue

Me: Okay

I made my way to the fridge to get the red bulls and it got me more tired when I saw that they didn't put prices, I sighed..

I turned and looked around I didn't see any of the workers so I walked around until I spotted one busy counting the stock. I approached him and slightly tapped him on his shoulder..

Me: Sorry.. Bengisacela ukubuza (Can I please ask)

He turned around and he took me by surprise, I didn't expect to see such a cutie. I didn't know if he was white or mixed race, he didn't look entirely black and his hair testified to that. In my state I didn't expect to see such a handsome fella, you know how it is when you interact with a very handsome guy, even when you know that yall aren't gonna date but you still get goosebumps and butterflies in your tummy..

Me: uhm Hi..

He looked at me and lowered his board that he was writing on..

Me: I just wanted to know how much these are?

He looked at them..

Him: There's no price where you got them?

Me: unfortunately No

Him: Let's go and check

I followed him as his cologne left a trail of nice smell...

He looked at the energy drinks while making a little sound like he was forced to say a price but didn't want to give me a wrong price..

Him: I think it's R22 each the big ones and the small ones it's usually R15... But you can ask when you get to the till they will scan it for you

Me: Okay uhm thank you

Him: You welcome

I turned but didn't walk.. I thought for a second and turned back to look at him again..

Me: I don't know how the store works but would your boss mind if I can skip right to the front?
See my lunch break is an hour long

Him: An hour is a lot of time I don't think you will stand for that long
I looked around and looked at him..

Me: May I please speak to the manager? I am kind of tired I don't wanna stand for that long
He chuckled while running his hand across his eyes..

Him: My Boss will probably say the same thing

Me: Can I talk to him?

Him: Okay I am not sure if I'm making myself clear b..

Me: Your boss please

Him: So you can't take a word from a junior staff?

Me: It's not like that

Him: It's like what?

Me: I.. Please may I speak to your boss?
He looked at me without saying anything..

Ntombi came to me..

Her: Aii girl we won't get anything it's full
She stood next to me..

Me: I might as well just take the energy drinks back
I walked to the fridge and put them back..

Ntombi: Enzo..

Him: Ntombi

Ntombi: Bra please yazi siku shift

Him: MaThousand uOne angeke ashaye usamile lapha (13:00 won't hit while you still standing there)

I immediately looked at him, so he is black..

Ntombi: ungayenzi so phela mina nawe sibuya kude (Don't do this you and I come very far)
I went and stood next to Ntombi..

Me: That's why I wanted us to see his Boss, maybe he will understand us more

Ntombi looked at me..

Ntombi: Ukungazi abantu nokungazi indawo kuyahlupha (not knowing people and places is a problem) He is the boss

That didn't register to me..

Me: Yeah right be serious

Him: Excuse me ladies

He walked away..

Ntombi: He owns the store kanti yini manje? (what's wrong now)

Me: Ntombi be serious.. He looks young to own this place supermarkets are usually owned by old people

Her: Enzo owns this place you can even ask the cashiers or anyone here.. I know the place because I am from here

She pushed me a little and walked away..

Her: We not holding the queue he is crazy.. Enzo maan bheka..

I stood there dumbfounded..

.

.

SNOWY

I looked at Layla sleeping, the medication makes her very drowsy..

I moved away from her and went to the lounge to watch Tv, life tends to get boring when you not working. Especially now that Okuhle is working it's only me and Layla around the house..

I took my phone from the table and tried to call Fufu but her phone was off, I went through my contacts and bumped into Khayone's number I called him, It rang twice before he picked up..

Him: Snowy?

Me: H.. Hey
Him: Yerr it's been long
Me: I know
Him: How are you holding up?
Me: I'm good and you?
Him: Ndi grand nam' (I'm Okay)
There was an awkward silence between us..
Me: I'm calling to ask if you have seen Fufu lately?
Him: You don't know?
Me: Don't know what?
Him: She was attacked not so long ago it was brutal that she got admitted
Me: Are you serious?
Him: Yeah I went to visit her yesterday
Me: I can't believe this
Him: How come you didn't know? I thought that you and Fufu were tight
Me: We were.. I mean we are tight
Him: Then you would know
Me: I guess I have been busy lately
Him: Lately?
Me: I..
Him: You have changed Snowy you no longer the Snowy that we all knew.. You don't even know that your best friend is in hospital, don't worry I'll Sms you the details so when you free you can go and see her
Me: Thank you
Him: Bye
Me: Kha..
He hung up on me..

56

SNOWY

I was woken up by a knock at the door I didn't even realize that I had passed out on the couch. I took the dstv remote and checked the time, it was 17:45. The person knocked again twice I got up from the couch and walked barefooted to answer the door since I couldn't find my flops anywhere..

I opened the door and to my surprise it was Naledi..

Me: Naledi?

Her: Hey

I let her in..

Me: What are you doing here?

She was wearing her netball skirt and tshirt with sneakers..

Her: I asked the driver to drop me off here after practice

Me: Why?

Her: I wanted to see how you and Layla were doing?

Me: We are doing fine

Her: Okay

I looked at her as her eyes wondered around, There has to be a reason why she is here but I'm not going to force it out of her..

Me: Why don't you put your bag on the counter and I'll make you a snack?

Her: I would like that

Me: You can go and watch Tv

Her: Thank you.. Is Layla watching Tv?

Me: She's sleeping

Her: That's a bummer I have downloaded games for her
Me: That's sweet baby
She put her bag down and then went to the lounge..
Me: What should I make you?
Her: Anything
I went to the lounge and looked at her..
Me: Bread with peanut butter?
Her: Okay
Me: Bread with butter only and juice?
She paused first before answering..
Her: Okay
Me: I don't even know if we have butter.. We haven't done grocery yet for this month so dry bread with juice
Her: Errr..
I looked at her..
Her: Ummm.. Okay
Me: Are you sure?
She nodded..
Me: Just kidding
She sighed in relief..
Me: Where you even going to eat that?
Her: I was going to try
We both laughed.. Layla showed up..
Me: Look who is up
Naledi: Hey!! (excited)
Me: You have been sleeping for a very long time
Naledi: Layla come sit next to me I have downloaded more games for you
Layla went and sat next to her.. Naledi took out her phone.
Me: They allow you guys to carry phones at school?
Naledi: No but I always keep in my bag and I make sure it's off
Me: Okay
Naledi: Look this one is called temple run
She put her arm around Layla and gave her the phone..
Naledi: You play it like this..
She showed her how to play..
Layla: You bumped the wall...
Naledi: That means I'm dead now you play
Layla started playing...
Naledi: You collect all the coins... No you turn like this.. You must be fast Layla... Look now you died
Layla: Aiich
She slightly hit herself on the forehead..
Naledi: You play again..
I stood there just looking at them it was a very Adorable moment I think Naledi growing up as an only child it made her lonely, there way she is with Layla is very sweet..

.

THOBEKGALE

I was at the gym it's not that far from the office. Gym has always been a place where I take out my frustrations, Anger and stress. If something had pissed me off I just go to the gym and take it all out. Ever since that incident with Snowy I couldn't go to the gym anymore, I had to wait for my wound to heal first so that I don't put pressure on that area and hurt myself..
I was on the treadmill, was wearing my nikey tights, shorts, and I didn't have a tshirt on. Was a

bit of a struggle to workout with all the ladies stealing glances at me every now and then. I got off the treadmill and went to get my towel, I hung it around my shoulders and then went to the counter to get Energade. I gulped it down and then threw the bottle in the trash when I saw Kresi walking in, she didn't look like she came for a workout..

She looked around until she saw me, she made her way to me while holding her bag she looked very terrified. She hasn't been okay ever since Shadow got arrested, she has been a bit depressed judging from her tweets..

Me: Hey what are you doing here?

Her: Naledi is missing

Me: What?

Her: I.. I went to her school to get her she had netball practice but she wasn't there

Me: What do you mean she wasn't there?

Her: I really don't know

Me: What did her coach say? Her teammates?

Her: They said she left 10min before.. Said something about not feeling well and that you were waiting for at the gate and then she left

Me: Naledi has started

Her: What do you mean "She has started"

Me: She probably went to that boy's house I thought we already spoke about this me and her She gave me a serious look, she was on attack mode.

Her: My Daughter could be kidnapped and you don't even care

Me: She is not kidnapped

Her: She could be!!! (yelling)

I looked at her..

Me: Keep your voice down

Her: Why? Why should I? You don't want anyone here knowing that you are selfish? You are selfish!! I bet if it was Snowy's child you would've went your way to finding her!!

Me: What are you talking about?

Her: You are useless!!!! Shadow went to jail for his Daughter and that conniving two timing bitch snowy! wena what have you done? What sacrifice have you put out for me and Naledi? You useless!

She started hitting me with her bag..

Her: You just useless and a spoiled brat!! All you know what to do is use Daddy's money! If it wasn't for Daddy you would be nothing!!! You a bitch, you buy respect and everything if it wasn't for Daddy's Money you would be nothing!.. Nothing!!

Her voice started breaking and her eyes became moist. What she was saying was angering me alot but we in a public place so I was forced to keep my cool..

One of the instructors came to us because this situation was being disruptive to other clients..

Her: Excuse me Sir is there a problem?

Me: Uhm No there's no problem I'm truly sorry about this

I tried to hold Kresi but she stepped back..

Her: Don't touch me!! Don't you dare touch me

Me: You being disruptive

Her: Do I care? You rich so buy this fucken gym so I can throw tantrums!!!

I gently grabbed her arm and pulled her..

Her: Let go of me!!

Me: Let's go outside

Her: No leave me alone!!

I tightened my grip and pulled her more..

.
.

SHADOW

I was laying on the bed on my back and lost deep in my thoughts when I heard the warden

whistling..

I listened closely again and the whistle was nearing, I got out from my bed and made my way to the bars. He made it as if like he was passing and gave me the envelope, I took it and then went back to my place of rest. I opened it and took out the picture of Layla, I turned it and it was written "Daddy I am out of the hospital" it wasn't her handwriting but it gave me a sense of peace knowing that she was doing well after I heard that she was admitted for meningitis..

I looked at her picture and smiled. She looked so adorable. Her hair was neatly tied into a bun, she had a very wide smile...

I put her picture under my pillow, Tpee had promised that I will get pictures of Layla for as long as I'm here and pictures. I hope Snowy is fine about this because she wasn't happy to know that I helped Budda with disposing the body and when she knew the whole truth she felt betrayed by me, she was angry. She was very angry to know that I have been working with Budda, that we both 28s..

.
.

THOBEKGALE

When we got outside I let go of her arm, I looked at her for a while without saying anything. My first thought was to beat the living daylights out of her after that stunt she pulled inside but another part of me was forced to calm down..

Me: Clearly your Anger is directed at me

She didn't say anything..

Me: Naledi is not missing, you know how she is.. When she does such things she's seeking attention you know very well how she's like

Her: We weren't a perfect couple but we loved each.. You loved me didn't you?

Me: I did

Her: Then what happened? Where did it all go wrong?

Me: Kresi please don't do this

Her: I'm going to do this because unlike Snowy and Nissi I am the only one who never felt your true love.. I am the one who felt your rage more, I was your punching bag, I was your.. I..

She broke down..

Her: I can't do this anymore... I'm tired, I just wanna die

I reached out for her hand and pulled her closer..

Her: I'm tired Tshepi.. I'm truly tired of feeling like this

Me: I know..

57

THOBEKGALE

I looked at her as she was sleeping peacefully like nothing will ever wake her up. I would've driven her to her house but I don't think it's wise for her to be alone when she's emotional like this, she might do something stupid. I took her to my flat and she was sleeping in Naledi's room, I still can't believe that she agreed to come home with me. I know that what I'm doing is not right I'm with someone else and I shouldn't be entertaining my ex wife but then she the mother of my child and I don't want Naledi to live with the fact that her Mother committed suicide. I took out my phone and checked I had missed calls from Snowy and a text:

"Naledi is here, she came here after school"

I immediately called her..

Snowy: Hello

Me: Hey Nono what did you mean in the text that Naledi is there?

I heard her exhaling..

Her: She came directly here after school

I walked out of the bedroom..

Me: Without telling anyone? Naledi is old to be doing this

Me: When you come here don't give her a hard time

Him: I shouldn't do what?

Me: Love if you become too hard on her you will be giving her more and more reason to always run away from home

Him: Fine I'll try not too

Me: Okay are you coming to fetch her?

Him: Ya I'm on my way... Should I bring you anything?

Me: Not really I'm fine

Him: Okay I'll be right there

Me: Okay

Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

.

.

SNOWY

After the phone call I went back in, they were having a really good time with Okuhle making them laugh. Okuhle has been in a very good mood that she even cooked for us when she got home after work, she was tired but then she didn't mind. Cooking and baking she does that a lot when she's happy, and how she has been jolly with Naledi and Layla has me suspecting her that something good happened to her today.

I took my plate and sat down, she had prepared Pap, tomato gravy, and wors for us..

Naledi: Thank you Okuhle that meal was very nice

Okuhle: What do you usually eat at home?

Naledi: When I'm at my Dad's we mostly eat out or order in, at my Grandpa's place there's always a chef and I only eat home cooked meals when I visit my Mom but she's not much of a good cook Okuhle: It must be nice coming from a rich family "At Grandpa's place there's always a chef"

We all laughed..

Naledi: It's not always nice not everyone who is rich is happy

I noticed a tone of sadness from that statement..

Okuhle: Time for dessert Snowy we will keep yours since you eating slow

She looked at Naledi..

Her: Sweetheart can you please come and help me

Naledi: Okay

She stood up and went to the kitchen with Okuhle...

.

.

SHADOW

I was playing cards with the other inmates when the Warden came and disturbed us..

Him: Shadow?

We stopped..

Him: You have a visitor

Me: A visitor? Thought visiting hours are over

Him: You have a visitor.. Do you wanna come or not?

I didn't think much of it other than that it could probably be Tpee, maybe he bribed his way in..

I put my cards down..

Me: Ayt

I got up and went to him, he opened for me and I went out. He led the way as I followed. Halfway through walking I noticed that we were not going to the visitors section..

Me: I thought you said I have a visitor

Him: There's cameras there so I don't want my bosses knowing that we letting visitors in after hours

Me: Cool

I followed him until we made it into some room, I should've known because Budda was in there..

Budda looked at the Warden..

Budda: Thank you

The Warden walked out..

Me: I should've known

Budda: You really should've

.
.

SNOWY

Naledi and Layla went to sleep. Okuhle and I were sitting in the lounge waiting for Thobekgale, I was really full Okuhle really fed us..

She put her hand on my tummy..

Her: Are we full?

Me: We are very full

I removed her hand before she made me vomit..

Her: Does Princess know that you and her Dad are expecting?

Me: Not yet.. We don't wanna tell a lot of people it's still early

Her: Okay

Me: Why are you soo happy?

Her: What do you mean?

Me: You know what I mean

Her: Nothing much just things have been very good at work

Me: Really? That's all?

Her: Yeap

The door opened..

We remained seated to see who it was and my Father made his way to the lounge..

Him: Girls

We greeted him back..

Okuhle: We have put your dish in the microwave

Him: Thank you.. I'll go and bath then eat

Okuhle: Okay

.
.

THOBEKGALE

I had just just finished showering and dressing up now I was on my way to fetch Naledi..

Kresi: Where are you going?

I turned and she made her way to me

Me: I'm going to fetch Naledi

Her: Where is she?

Me: At a friend's house

Her: Okay.. Thank you for this

Me: You welcome

Her: I'll get myself together.. I'll go to therapy if I have too

Me: That's good

She nodded..

Me: I should get going

Her: Okay.. Wait let fix the collar of your golfer T

She wrapped her arms around my neck and fixed it, all along we looked deep into each other's eyes..

Her: It's now fixed

Me: Thank you

I don't know what happened but before I knew it we were kissing..

I picked her up and then we went to the bedroom..

SEASON FINALE

-

58

SHADOW

I was caught up in a messy situation that's what Wardens do when a gang leader wants to deal with an enemy or someone who is a threat to their territory, Budda can do anything right now and the warden will act like nothing happened and they will get rid of my body..

Budda: I didn't see that one coming

Me: I had to do what I had to do

Him: Exactly why did you do it?

Me: I had to protect someone close to me, someone who means the world to me

Him: Who? Snowy? I thought that shit of a relationship ended long time ago

Me: Not Snowy but my Daughter

Him: What makes you think I was going to go for her?

Me: Anything can happen with you.. You don't have an impressive history

Him: I might get life

Me: Might is an understatement

He chuckled..

Him: I can still get to your Daughter do you know that?

Me: I would like to see you try

He made his way to me..

Him: I believe you will be here for a while.. We still going to have our moment

Me: I look forward to it

I trust that Tpee will protect Layla while I'm in here..

.

.

THOBEKGALE

She was only left with her underwear and bra, I still had my jeans on but I was shirtless..

She was laying back on the bed and I was ontop of her, we were kissing. Something right there crossed my mind, Snowy, Naledi and my unknown baby. I can't do this, I can't ruin my chances of having a complete family with the most amazing girl that I have ever met in my life..

I stopped and got off her..

Me: I can't do this

She looked at me..

Me: You can call and Uber for yourself

I picked up my tshirt..

Me: This is going to hurt you a great deal because nothing is going to happen, it will just end here with sex

Her: So I had to be on your bed half naked for you to realize that?

I looked at her..

Me: I got you in bed because I was feeling sorry for you, I felt guilty for a moment that you an emotional wreck like this because of me but then it hit me that it's not my fault, I cannot be held responsible for our failed marriage and you shouldn't either. I had the courage to move on

She laughed..

Her: It was easy for you to move on because you were not the one who felt most pain

Me: You think I didn't get hurt when we divorced? Kresi everyday you would make my ears bleed that you wanted a divorce, I give you one and I'm the bad guy? What is it exactly with you? Do you even know that another reason why Shadow did this was because he saw that he was wasting time with you? He loved you and unfortunately you couldn't love him the same way. It's life, shit happens move on from it!

She got out of bed and picked her clothes from the floor..

Me: When I come back I hope you will be gone

.
.
SNOWY

Thobekgale was taking forever. Naledi cannot sleep over, I don't have any means of transportation to take her to school tomorrow or any day other day. She was still sleeping and I went to the lounge to talk to my Father, he was watching soccer..

Him: I thought everyone went to bed

Me: I sleep a lot during the day.. I am not sleepy right now
I sat down..

Him: How are you feeling?

Me: I'm getting there

Him: And Layla?

Me: She's alright

(Silence)

Me: Dad we need to talk

Him: Sounds serious

Me: It is

Him: Let's hear it

I took a deep breath..

Me: I'm pregnant

He didn't say anything, I also didn't know what to say..

Him: That's.. When did it happen? I.. You don't look pregnant

Me: I'm one month and two weeks pregnant it's still early days

Him: Pregnant by that Thobekgale boy?

Me: Yes

Him: Snowy that boy is bad news.. Ever since he came into your life everything has been messy

Me: Dad Thobekgale is not that bad.. He loves me and he loves Layla too

Him: I don't know I seriously don't know

Me: This is actually the first time I have been happy in a very long time... I am in a stable relationship with a man who loves me, I am not being used in any way

Him: Are you sure that you happy with him?

Me: Yes I am

Him: Fine then I won't stand in your way.. If you happy I'm happy

Me: Thank you

Him: The next time I'll hear Okuhle saying that she is also happy with someone else.. Something like that

I laughed...

Him: As long as you guys are happy that's all I want

Me: Thank you very much.. He will be coming to fetch us his Daughter is even here

Him: His Daughter is here?

Me: Yes... She is very fond of Layla.. I think growing up all those years being the only child has taken a toll on her

Him: It could be.. As long as you guys are going to be safe then that's good

Me: Thank you.. Let me go and pack a few clothes

Him: You guys are not going forever right?

Me: No.. Not forever

Him: That's good

.
.
KRESI

I thought I had him, for a moment there I did have him. I put on my dress, I had called the Uber and it was going to be here in no time..

I looked around and an idea struck me, Snowy needs to know what type of man she has. I took

off my underwear and went to put it in the small laundry basket that was at the corner of the bathroom. He usually throws in his dirty towels in there and since he doesn't do his own laundry I am sure that the lady of the house will find it..

I took my bag and walked away..

.

.

SNOWY

He showed up after two hours I was even ready to go to bed..

Me: Where have you been?

Him: I've been busy sorry.. I really wanted to be here on time

He kissed me..

Me: Well the kids are sleeping so long we can get the bags in the car

Him: Bags?

Me: Layla and I we visiting

Him: Really?

Me: Ya I think Naledi would really appreciate it

Him: Not only her but even me too

Me: You can take the bags to the car and I'll get Layla

I'll also wake Naledi up

I hope this is a start of the happiness that I have always wanted

SEASON FINALE

-

59

THOBEKGALE

The following morning I walked into Naledi's bedroom she was preparing to go to school.. She didn't respond to me in a positive way I think she knew that she was in trouble for what happened yesterday..

Me: So let's talk

I went and sat on the small dressing table chair..

Me: What happened yesterday?

She kept quiet. I remembered Snowy's words that I must have a gentle approach towards her..

Me: I am not angry.. I just wanna understand why you gave us such a freight

Her: I just wanted to be with Snowy and Layla

Me: Why didn't you call me and let me know?

Her: Because you would've said No...

Me: You do like Snowy and Layla don't you?

She nodded..

Me: Finish up so we can go

Her: Okay

I stood up..

Her: You not Angry?

Me: No.. But next time learn to call don't just disappear you scared me

Her: I promise

I made my way out of her bedroom and went to the kitchen, Snowy was picking up Layla's teddy bear and shoes from the floor..

I stood at the doorway and looked at her for a while, she was wearing leggings one of my tshirts and flops.

I was blessed to have such a beautiful woman be in front of me, and it also made me realize how much of a fool I was yesterday by almost being tempted by my ex wife..

Her eyes wondered around until they landed on me, she gave me her warm smile..

Her: Good morning

I smiled at her too..

Me: Morning

Her: Is Naledi ready?

Me: Almost

Her: Should I make you guys something to eat?

Me: Not really we will grab something on the way you shouldn't strain yourself

Her: I'll know if I'm straining myself trust me

Me: I was talking to my Father over the phone last night and he wants to meet you, maybe tonight we can go to his place

Her: Tonight? And you only telling me now?

Me: It's just going to be dinner

Her: Yes but he is just not anyone

Me: You will be fine

Naledi walked in..

Naledi: Good morning

Snowy: Hey you

Naledi: What are you doing?

Snowy: Nothing much just wanna clean a bit and maybe do some laundry

Naledi: Okay

Snowy: Enjoy your day at school

Naledi: I will

Me: Are you ready to go?

Naledi: Ya I'm ready

.

.

OKUHLE

Enzo really melted my heart that day, I don't know why but since from when we met I couldn't get him off my mind..

This morning before going to work I passed by at the store to buy "breakfast" in hopes that I will see him. I wanted to make sure that he really exists, because that time he could've just been a pass by. I strolled around from shelf to shelf busy passing time hoping to see him but I didn't, I looked around almost everywhere and he wasn't in the store I was a bit disappointed. I bought breakfast, muesli with yogurt then I went to pay and only when I was on my way out I saw him coming in, he was not even looking around just minding his own business. He looks very unapproachable, he has that serious look on his face that no one shouldn't fuck with him..

I gave the security guard my receipt at the door and then walked out still looking at Enzo hoping that he would turn around and then see me but he didn't, that was a bummer...

.

.

SNOWY

I walked into the bathroom and he has this tendency of using a towel and leaving it on the floor, I sighed abs then picked it up. I went to throw it in the basket and it was full of towels, I should probably wash them before we run out of towels. As I was about to empty the basket Layla disturbed me..

Her: Mommy

Me: When did you wake up?

Her: Now.. I don't feel good

I left the basket and went to her..

Me: What's wrong?

Her: I have a headache and I feel like vomiting

Me: Come let me make you something to eat and then you drink your medication

I held her hand and we went to the kitchen..

.
.

KRESI

Assistant: Miss Thobekgale you have a message

Me: Who is it?

Her: She said her name is Nissi

Me: Ohw I'll call her now now

Her: Alright

Me: Attend those clients in the meantime

Her: Yes Mam'

I went back to my office to call Nissi..

Her: Hello

Me: Hey it's me

Her: Oh yeah I did call but your assistant said you busy

Me: I was a bit busy but now we can talk

Her: Can you come to my place on Thursday? The wedding is on Saturday I need you to help me with a few things

Me: No problem I will come... So is Tshepi coming?

Her: I am not really sure

Me: Agh even if he doesn't come it's okay Vic will be there, Naledi is going to be there so..

Her: Ya I have made peace with it

Me: Okay I'll see you then

Her: Thank you very much

Me: You welcome

.
.

OKUHLE

I have called at work that I'll be late, I have been chilling in my car at the parking lot debating with myself if I should go in again at the supermarket or not, I mean I was still very much intoxicated by Enzo.

I got out of my car and went to the supermarket, I walked around a bit looking for him until I saw him standing by the fridge with some other employee they were wearing the exact same shirts. I stood there hidden a bit by a shelf while looking at him, he was doing much talking he was just nodding as the other guy was talking. I got lost on how handsome he was, how can such a human being exist? He has officially become my crush..

My phone vibrated, it even scared me a little I got it out and it was Ntombi..

Me: Hey

Her: Where are you?

Me: I'm running late.. Traffic

Her: You are 30min late

Me: I have already called the supervisor that I'll be a bit late

Her: Get your ass over here you know we always short staffed

Me: I'll be there!

I hung up..

I went back to checking them out but they were no longer standing there, that was disappointing..

Enzo: Are you stalking me?

He was standing behind me, my heart went straight to my knees

60

OKUHLE

I turned around and he was standing right in front of me right in my face with his intimidating serious look. Something about him that makes me nervous, makes me wanna count my words incase I say something stupid that I will regret for life. Saying something to such guys will make you regret it all your life, you will go to bed still thinking about it whether you still with them or not..

Me: Sorry?

Him: Are you stalking me?

His eyes remained fearlessly squinted, his position just intimidated me more with his hands in his pockets..

Me: I wa.. I wasn't stalking you

Him: Is it?

He was being politely rude, his voice remained very calm and polite but it carried a lot of Authority..

Him: If I'm not mistaken you were watching while we were standing by the fridge

Me: I wasn't

Him: Yes you were

Me: I was actually starring at your colleague or employee

He mocked me with a chuckle..

Him: Whatever suits your pride

He walked away..

Me: Agh you ain't even all that

He stopped and turned around, maybe I spoke soo soon..

Him: What was that?

Me: Nothing

Him: Better be nothing

I don't know what it is about handsome guys that it makes them be so rude..

.

.

SNOWY

Layla was getting a bit worse her temperature was high and all she wanted to do was sleep because she felt extremely dizzy, some of the symptoms she couldn't really tell me about them in detail..

I took my cellphone and called Thobekgale, I was really worried and scared..

Him: Nono..

Me: Layla is sick

Him: What's wrong?

Me: Her breathing is abnormal, her temperature is high and she just wants to sleep

Him: Okay I'm on my way

Me: Thank you.. Sorry if I inco..

Him: Don't.. Layla means a lot to me too

I feel like we becoming a drag to him plus Layla is not even his biological child..

.

.

SHADOW

I met up with my Lawyer the one that Tpee got for me.

Him: How are you?

Me: I'm good

Him: Ready for your judgment next week?

Me: I'll take whatever I'm given

Him: The maximum you can get is 10 years, you testifying against Budda helped

Me: That's good

Him: You might even get probation

Me: That's very good

Him: Is everything fine inside? No one harassing you?

Me: Everything is fine

Him: You know we can get you protection

Me: Just make sure I get a fair sentence that's all

Him: I will

He opened his briefcase and took out an envelope..

Him: More pictures for your Daughter

Me: Thank you

.

.

SNOWY

He arrived quicker than I had anticipated..

Him: Is she okay?

Me: I don't think so

Him: I'll get her

He went and picked her up..

Him: Let's go

Me: I thought the Meds were working

Him: Meningitis is very complex.. I really need to bring in a surgeon that has dealt with such cases

Me: Thank you

We drove Layla to the hospital and I was very worried about her, it seems like this condition is getting worse and worse instead of getting better..

.

.

OKUHLE

I was very down at work maybe I should just let this Enzo thing go, I mean it's just a stupid crush tomorrow I might see another hot guy and I'll forget all about Enzo.. Since Snowy and I grew up the way that we did, I haven't been a fan of dating. I haven't had sex in years I don't think I'll feel comfortable if a guy touches me it will bring back certain memories. I was young but I remember a portion of what used to happen, especially to Snowy..

My phone vibrated, I checked if the supervisor was around and she wasn't. I answered it..

Me: Hello?

It was quiet on the other end..

Me: Hello?

Voice: Kuhle

It was my Grandmother..

Me: Koko?

Her: How are you?

Me: I'm fine and you?

Her: I wish I was fine

Me: Koko I am at work

Her: You have a job now?

Me: Yes

Her: That's good news congratulations

Me: Thank you

Her: I'll call you later then

Me: Ohw

Her: Bye and enjoy your day at work

Me: Bye

That was very awkward, so now she's just gonna act like nothing happened. Probably want us to pick up where we left off I don't think it will happen..

.

THOBEKGALE

I left Snowy and Layla at the hospital and went home to get Layla's things. Her teddy bear is something that she always has to have with her, need to get her pjs all the things that will make her not miss home that much. I really need to get a Dr that knows what's happening, I don't want Snowy stressing. The gynecologist said that the first and last trimesters of pregnancy are very critical..

I went to the bathroom to take a piss and the basket was on the floor, most of the towels were out. I picked it up and put the towels back in when I stumbled upon an underwear that looked familiar, I starred at it for a while. I have never seen Snowy wearing a lace underwear, and she's a bit bigger than this. I went to her suitcase and checked her underwears and this one was definitely not hers, I thought for a while and I knew very well who it belonged too.. I took my phone and dialed her number..

Kresi: That's very unusual thought you wanted nothing to do with me

Me: Can we meet? At your place say in 30min or so?

Her: Uhm why?

Me: We have unfinished business..

Her: Okay I'll go there now

Me: See you then

Her: Bye

61

KRESI

I waited for him and pulled at my driveway, I waited for him to get out of the car before fixing the curtain. He was wearing casual and he had his hat on, he was wearing a tank top that clearly revealed his strong arms. I fixed the curtain when I saw him approaching the door, I really need to get him back. I waited for him to ring the bell twice and then I went and opened for him, he walked in..

Me: Hey

Him: Hey

Me: So what..

He came closer and kissed me, there way he kisses me still makes me a bit dizzy..

Him: Should we go upstairs?

Me: Yes

We walked upstairs..

Me: I hope this time around you won't leave me hanging

Him: Never

We got upstairs and I closed the door after he has walked in..

I turned around..

Me: S..

I was met by a punch in the middle of my face, I went down immediately. I felt like my nose broke or something and it made me dizzy..

He took out two zip ties from his pocket and then tied my arms together..

Me: What are you doing?

I could feel that I was bleeding..

He also tied my legs and then took off my clothes, he didn't even care that he ripped my skirt. I was scared, I was very scared but I knew screaming was going to be useless. Neighbours won't hear, my house is a bit big with a very high wall fence and the sliding door was closed..

I was only left with my bra, he even took off my underwear..

Me: What are you doing?

Him: You really want me that bad.. That you would plant your underwear for Snowy to find it? You really want me that bad? Then this is me

He took off his belt and started whipping me, I felt every whip tearing through my skin. He used all his strength..

Me: I'm sorry (Crying)

.

.

SNOWY

I tried him again but he didn't answer, Layla was still sleeping. She is going to need her teddy bear when she wakes up..

Me: Thobekgale it's me again.. Where are you? Layla is going to wake up and cry if Mr cuddles is not next to her, I know this might be too much for you but please call me

I put my phone on my thigh and exhaled..

After a few minutes it vibrated, I thought it was him but it was a landline number that I couldn't recognize.

Me: Hello?

Voice: Hello

It was Shadow..

Him: Don't hang up please

Me: What do you want?

Him: I know you mad and probably don't wanna see me ever again but you need to know that I didn't plan this, It was never my intention to hurt you

Me: That apology goes with what? You abusing me throughout our relationship? Being Shadow's lapdog or helping him kill my Mom?

Him: I didn't help him kill her

Me: You helped him hide the body didn't you??

Him: If I was really his lapdog I wouldn't have told the police the truth

Me: Look my Daughter is hospitalized and I'm pregnant, I don't need stress in my life

Him: Layla is hospitalized?

I hung on him and covered my face with my hands, this was too much for me..

.

.

THOBEKGALE

When I looked at her she wasn't moving anymore but she was still crying, all those red marks all over her body make my skin to crawl a little. Some other parts I think I went too hard because she was bleeding a little, and she was swollen. I don't know what came over me but my intentions were to put her in her place, I found myself letting Tpee take over. A part of me didn't really care what severe damage I do to her, all I thought about was Snowy finding that underwear and leaving me for good..

I was a tired from exhausting all my energy on her, I stood there breathing fast.

I took my phone and went to the bathroom to call my Dad..

Him: Tshepi?

Me: I need a favour from you

Him: What favour?

Me: Snowy is at the hospital?

Him: Why? What's wrong?

Me: Her Daughter is sick I need you to go and check on them

Him: What?

Me: This is the only time you can meet her

Him: What are you talking about?

Me: I'll Sms you the details

I hung up and Smsed him the details..

I went back to attend Kresi..

.

.

ENZO

My Mother passed on when I was young she committed suicide because my Father had fallen in love with my Mother's Sister. That's something I would never forget, seeing my Mother dangling on the ceiling like that she couldn't take the pain of her husband divorcing her and then marrying her Sister.

After my Mother's death me and my Father never really got along, I became rebellious in my teen years and I got into a lot of trouble. He died without me and him making peace and surprisingly he had signed off everything to me. His car, the supermarket, and house. I never knew about it, My Mother's Sister had kept it a secret she made it seem like My Father signed off everything to her. I lived knowing that my Father was the reason why my Mother killed herself and that he left everything to my Aunt but only to find out late that she tricked me. Bitch had nothing, my father left nothing for her and as soon as the Lawyer told me I sent her packing. Everything that had happened made me a bitter person, I fell in love with someone and I hurt her badly that she left me for someone else. I couldn't take that I went for the guy's life and shot him, I almost killed him and I got arrested. He dropped the charges against me and here I am today, trying to get my life back together. Jail wasn't fun for me at all and now this girl wants to be my next mistake. I looked at her as she walked in with Ntombi, in my whole life I have never seen such a beautiful dark skinned girl. Her thick lips, her smile, her smile, her flawless chocolate skin. I can tell that she has a very humble spirit, she is a beaut..

As soon as her eyes landed on me her smile disappeared, she whispered something to Ntombi and then walked out..

Ntombi looked at me and shook his head..

.

.

SNOWY

I cried soo much that I ended up falling asleep on the chair, I was gently woken up by the Nurse..

Her: Mam'

I slowly opened my eyes and I saw some old man standing in the middle of the room, he was wearing blue formal pants with matching shoes. He had on a white shirt and had a jersey around his neck, I blinked at least 3 times to convince myself that Vic Thobekgale wasn't standing in my child's ward..

Nurse: We don't usually let in strangers or extended family members in the kids ward unless the parents approve, he said that you would approve..

I looked at the Nurse..

Me: It's okay

She walked away..

Vic: I believe that you Snowy?

I stood up..

Me: Yes I.. I am Snowy

He stretched his hand out to me..

Him: I am Vic Thobekgale.. Tshepi's Father

My heart stopped beating..

62

SNOWY

Vic was in my baby's ward, I found it very difficult to believe..

Him: Your Daughter is beautiful

Me: Thank you very much

Him: You also beautiful

Me: Thank you

That made me blush a little..

Him: When should we come for Lobola negotiations?

I chuckled..

Him: So what can I help with? I'm here to help

Me: The Doctors said they will keep her here for at least two days for observation

Him: I know a surgeon who is good with such cases

Me: Thobekgale had promised to get us one

Him: Thobekgale?

Me: Tshepi sorry I call him Thobekgale

He slightly smiled..

Him: Where is he?

Me: He went home to get us a few things, he is supposed to be here now I don't know where he is

Him: He asked me to come and check on you guys, maybe he went back to the office there's an emergency

Me: Yes Sir

I was nervous no lie..

Him: So what should I know about you?

Me: uhmm

Him: Tell me about your family

Me: My Mother is late

Him: I'm sorry to hear that what happened?

Me: He was murdered by my step Dad

Him: That's brutal.. I hope he is behind bars

Me: He is

Him: That's good

Me: I live with my Father he has his own plumbing business, my little sister works at a hospital and I was working at some restaurant until the incident of me getting kidnapped and Layla being constantly sick all the time I always have to be around

Him: We will get Layla better so that you can be able to back to work

Me: Thank you Sir

Him: Let me go I'll see you

Me: Okay

He walked out, I could finally breath..

.

.

KRESI

My body was in pain, I was in soo much pain that I even passed out when he was beating me. I slowly opened my eyes and everything was blurry at first but after some few seconds I was able to see. I felt something a bit tight and cold around my neck, I ran my hand on my neck and it was a chain. He had chained me like a dog, the chain extended to the leg of my bed. Tears started streaming down, this is not right. My biggest mistake was to force him to love me, I loved him and I didn't wanna give up on him and It hurt me a great deal to know that out of all the women he has dated, I am the only one who was never loved dearly. Even though we were married and I gave him a child, something that he desperately wanted..

He came all around, he had taken off his tank top..

Me: Please let me go..

My voice was breaking..

Him: I'm afraid I can't do that, You wanted us to get back together and this is how it's going to be

He pulled me up by my hair, I couldn't stand up because the chain was small. If I try to stand straight I'll hurt myself..

Me: I'm sorry I'll never bother you ever again

He removed the chain from my neck, he picked me up and literally threw me on the bed. I flinched..

Him: You remember our sex life? When I would just fuck you like the prostitute that you were?

He took out a box of condoms..

Him: You almost broke me up with Snowy for this? Then I will give you what you want!

.
.

ENZO

I don't know what Ntombi said to her but she came back in, I looked at them as they stood in the queue to buy food. She kept on stealing glances at me, my eyes didn't shift from her. Kitso the supervisor came to me.

Him: I'm going to the suppliers

(Silence)

Him: Enzo

I looked at him..

He whistled a little...

Him: She's a beaut

Me: You going to the suppliers?

Him: Yeah

Me: Ayt man

Him: Why don't you just go and talk to her?

Me: Just go dude

He mocked me with a chuckle and walked away..

.
.

KRESI

Forced sexual intercourse is the worst, the friction that the condom caused and it was very painful. His weight on my already aching body didn't help, I laid there and hoped that death comes quicker. He had his hand around my neck strangling me, he was having no mercy at all.. He made me look at him..

Him: I want my face and this moment to haunt you forever

This is not a human being, he cannot be a human being. I endured the pain until he finally came, he pulled out and the condom was covered a bit with blood I haven't had sex in a long time so what he did really hurt. He rolled it off and went to flushed it..

He came back and got dressed, he took the bottle of still water and poured the water at me..

Him: That is my love for you.. I love you baby

He threw the bottle at me and then made his way out..

.
.

ENZO

The queue to get food here is impossible it is always full especially starting from 11:00am..

Me: You will find me outside

Ntombi: So mina mele ngime ngiyi 1?(so I must stand alone)

Me: Stop complaining

I took out my phone and went to the exit, I thought that I had memorized my route until I bumped into something, he held me. It was Enzo, my throat became dry. My mouth dried up and I had a tingling sensation on my hands..

Him: Next time you should watch were you going

Me: I will

He let go of me and I walked out..

63

OKUHLE

I was shattered to hear that Layla was admitted again I thought that she was getting better but I guess I was wrong. When I knocked off I drove straight to the hospital to see her, I also wanted

to relieve Snowy a little so she can go and rest in her state she shouldn't be under this much stress. I will sleep over in Layla's room and I'll leave the following day in the morning, lucky because I was off the next day. She was worse than before, didn't wanna be her bubbly self just wanted to sleep. I was getting worried because I read about meningitis and how dangerous it is.. I went to get myself coffee, I exhaled and walked out to get some fresh air and prevent myself from crying..

It was a bit chilly outside just what I wanted to feel the cold breeze again my skin..

Me: God please spare our Angel, spare her life

I stood outside for a while and then went back inside to sit in the waiting area when after a while I heard a familiar voice..

Him: Stalking me again?

I looked behind me and he was standing behind my chair, I got up..

Him: Relax I'm joking

He came the other way around to sit next to him..

Him: Who are you here to see?

Me: My Niece.. You?

Him: My Grandmother but she is getting discharged tomorrow morning so I won't be coming here anymore

Me: Good for you

Him: What's wrong with your Niece?

Me: Meningitis

Him: I'm sorry

Me: I don't even think she's going to make it

Him: It's a good hospital and they have the best Doctors I am sure they trying their best

Me: I hope so

Him: Maybe we got off on the wrong foot last time.. Enzo

Me: Okuhle

Him: Okuhle such a unique name

Me: It's everywhere

Him: I haven't met a girl by the name of Okuhle

Me: How many girls have you met?

Him: Are you actually asking how many girls I've met or how many girls I've fucked?

Me: My word you so explicit

We both laughed..

Him: So how about coffee some other time?

Me: I thought you said I was stalking you

Him: That's before you told me that your name was Okuhle

Me: Well tomorrow I'm off

Him: Then tomorrow morning is a good time to go out may I have your phone

I gave him my phone..

Him: Thank you

He stood up and walked away leaving me there dumbfounded.. He came back..

Him: Just joking

He sat down and saved his number..

Him: If you serious about the coffee date you will ring me in the morning

Me: Okay

He checked his watch..

Him: I have to go.. I hope your niece recovers

Me: Thank you

That was unexpected.. What are the odds though of always bumping into each other

.

.

KRESI

With the last strength I had I got my phone and called Nissi, I was still trembling that I couldn't even hold the phone steady next to my ear..

Nissi: Kresi hey

My throat raised no words, only tears streamed down..

Nissi: Kresi? Are you okay? I can hear you sniffing

(Silence)

Nissi: Girl are you drunk again?

Me: He hit me and raped me

She paused for a while..

Her: What are you talking about?

Me: Tpee he... I'm scared Nissi.. I'm scared he might come back again

Her: Okay hold on I'm coming.. I might take a bit longer but I'll call the cops

Me: No!! Don't call the cops

Her: Kresi if he is still around only.. When I get there he might have.. I..

Me: Don't call the cops please

Her: Okay just lock yourself in your closet until I arrive, do not bath.. I am on my way okay?

Me: Okay

I hung up...

.
.

SNOWY

Me: What do you wanna eat tonight?

She shrugged her shoulders..

Me: What's wrong with you? You never this quiet

Her: I just miss my Mom

Me: Did you try to call her?

Her: Ya she is not picking up

Me: You can visit her this weekend

Her: I feel bad though.. I have been a bit hard on her

Me: Well you have to change your attitude towards her, after all she's your Mom and she loves you

She nodded..

Her: How is Layla?

Me: She is a bit bad.. She's worse than before

Her: I'm sure Dad will get her a good Dr

Speaking of his Dad I don't know what has been happening with him today, he is not answering my calls and I don't know where he is..

The door opened and he walked in, judging from his eyes I could see that he was a bit sloshed..

Him: Ladies

Naledi: Hey Daddy

He walked up to Naledi and kissed her on her forehead..

Him: How was school?

Her: It was okay

I looked at Naledi..

Me: Chicken?

She nodded..

Naledi: Daddy I was thinking that I can visit Mom maybe tomorrow

Him: You wanna visit Mom?

Her: Ya I miss her

Him: That's a first

Her: I know that things have been difficult between us but I do miss her

Him: I'll check with her because she is busy helping Your Aunt plan her wedding I don't even think that she's around remember the wedding is this weekend

Her: I'll call her
Him: I'll go and talk to her tomorrow
Her: Okay
Him: Let me talk to Snowy for a few minutes
She left the room..
Him: How is Layla?
Me: If you were answering your phone you would know
Him: Yeah I was busy
Me: With what? Clearly you weren't at work
Him: What is this now?
Me: I just thought it would've been better if you called and told me that you weren't coming anymore
Him: What difference would it have made? It's not like the fucken teddy bear was going to cure her?
I looked at him..
Me: Wow!
I put the chicken back in the freezer, and walked to the bedroom..
Him: Fuck... Nono I'm sorry
I closed the door at him but he blocked it..
I went and sat on the bed and started crying with my hands covering my face..
Him: That was insensitive I'm sorry
He put his hands on my thighs and kissed me on my big forehead..
Him: I'm sorry
He removed my hands from covering my face and kissed me..
Him: I'm really sorry
Me: I just don't need all this stress it's not good for me and for the baby I even missed my appointment today with the Gynae
Him: We will see the Gynae tomorrow and I'll make sure that I get that surgeon to look into Layla's case okay?
I nodded..
Him: I love you
Me: I love you too
Him: as a sign of forgiveness can I see that beautiful smile?
Me: No..
Him: Come on
Me: No get away from me..
He started tickling me..
Me: Stop it (laughing)
Him: That's better
He slightly pushed me back and then got ontop of me, we kissed..
. .

KRESI

I was laying on the bathroom floor busy thinking about what happened, the coldness in his eyes when he was hitting me. I swear that I swore the devil in him, he was the devil himself.. Maybe I brought this on myself, I wanted him so bad and forgot that he is a monster. He didn't love me, he doesn't love me and I shouldn't accepted. I even lost the only man who loved me, Shadow loved me but I was too caught up on my ex that I blocked him away and eventually pushed him away..

Nissi: Kresi??? Kresi???

Me: Nissi

Nissi: Kresi where are you?

Me: I'm in here!!

She opened the bathroom door and walked in, I was naked..

Her: Ohh my.. Look at you what happened?

She got down and she wanted to hug me but at the same time she couldn't because my whole body was just covered in bruises..

Her: Let me get your gown we going to the hospital..

Me: Nissi no

Her: You need help

Me: The hospital will open a case against him

Nissi: That's exactly what should happen!!! He needs to go to jail!

Me: Nissi please

Her: Kresi he has to pay for what he did, Tshepi cannot always get away with everything!! He needs to be humbled and jail will humble him trust me!

64

KRESI

Nissi doesn't understand this situation Tshepi is not just anyone, his father's money has ruined him. He gets away with anything and everything because Daddy and his money are always there to protect him, despite his mischievous ways his Father is always there to have his back and he would do anything to protect his only child. It makes matters worse to even know that Vic never liked me because of my prostitution history, I know for a fact that my past will be brought up should I take legal steps against them.

I had just finished bathing wasn't a pleasant experience, the warm water contributed to my bruises I am just hoping the salt will help. I laying on my bed, I wanted to take a couple of painkillers but I couldn't take them before I had something to eat, Nissi had was preparing some chicken noodle soup for me with rolls. It may seems as if like what Tshepi did doesn't affect me but it does, the thing is when I was still a prostitute I experienced this a lot. Sometimes clients would be rough, some would require more rounds than what they have actually paid for so that life made me tough. There was no justice for the cruelty I was shown those years you just had to cry it out and then move on because there was nothing you could do and the woman who owned us didn't really care, I learned to be tough through those experiences..

She brought me tray and I sat up straight with pillows behind me..

Her: I know that we have been through this but I still don't understand why you don't wanna report him, now you have bathe and got rid of the evidence that he raped you. Kresi I know that in your head you obsessed with him I get it but despite your love for him he has violated you, and you have the right to take legal action against him! You have a daughter for crying out loud what if something like this happens to Naledi? You would advise her that the situation is normal? Really Kresi?

Really Kresi?

Me: We talking about the Thobekgales here

Her: They not above the law!

Me: You only saying that because you not in my shoes! Thobekgales they above everything, they have money and power. If I could peruse this case and he goes to jail and come out or I lose he is going to kill me Nissi, he has no heart and he has no soul! I don't expect you to understand but I can't do this okay?

(Silence)

Her: I may not understand what you went through but I understand suffering at his hand. Tshepi can charm you, make you feel like you the only woman in the world, treat you like a queen, there's nothing that you can ask and he cannot do. You get happy having such a man in your life, he is like a soldier nothing will ever happen to you when he is in your life. You get more charmed by the fact that almost everyone bows at him, he is never scared hell dare you would even think he is a god or something but then.. Then the obsession starts, the abuse, he becomes a demon

he posses your soul. His love becomes toxic and everything else becomes useless. The money, cars, house and everything they become worthless because he has your soul and he can kill you anytime. You always live in fear, tears, depression and before you knew it he destroys you and goes to the next best thing leaving you in pieces that the next person to get you can't even fix you. If you not strong enough you can even kill yourself

Me: I thought that when I gave him a child he would change but he didn't, for the years that we have been married I wanted a divorce and he couldn't give me but one day he just woke up and divorced me when I had hope that we were going to work through our marriage

I heard some certain noise that scared me..

Her: It's okay I think something fell in the bathroom I'll check it out.. You just eat and drink your pain killers then sleep

My phone rang and she got it..

Her: It's Naledi

Me: She has been calling

Her: You wanna talk to her?

I nodded.. She handed me the phone..

Me: Hello

Her: Mommy

Me: Hey baby

Her: I have been calling

Me: I know.. I'm sorry mommy was busy

Her: I wanted to visit you.. I miss you

That was a first, hearing my Daughter saying she misses me..

I closed my eyes..

Me: Mommy is not around Baby.. Remember I have to help Aunty Nissi with her wedding

Her: I thought we were going to go together on Thursday

Me: There's a lot to do.. Mommy had to leave early

Her: Okay

Me: I'm sorry

Her: I'll see you at the wedding baby

Her: Okay I love you

Me: I love you too

I heard a door opening and closing in the background, then I heard his voice. I immediately dropped the phone..

Nissi: Are you okay?

Me: I heard him talking in the background

I was scared and shaking, hearing him talking reminded me of the horror..

Nissi: It's okay.. I'm here

.

.

SNOWY

The following day I woke up to a scrumptious breakfast in bread prepared by Thobekgale..

Him: Thought I could prepare something for you since today you two months pregnant

Me: How did you know?

Him: You mark your calender everyday

Me: What were you doing snooping through my things?

Him: I wasn't snooping

Me: Then how did you find my calendar in my suitcase?

Him: Woman can't you just appreciate me doing something nice for you?

I laughed..

Me: This really looks nice

I looked at him..

Me: Thought that you were accompanying me to the Gynae?

Him: Thought we would go at around 13:00? I have back to back meetings this morning

Me: Ohw

Him: If I'm gonna take care of my family I gotta hustle everyday

Me: It's okay I understand Mr CEO

I moved the tray...

Me: Let me go brush my teeth so I can eat

I got out of bed and went to the bathroom to brush my teeth, he showed up after a few seconds..

Him: And we have to ask if it's safe to have sex because really I can't take the starvation anymore

Me: Typical of you to say that

He came closer and kissed me on my neck..

Me: Thobekgale stop

Him: I miss you and you sleeping only in your underwear doesn't help the situation

Me: We will ask the Gynae if it's safe

Him: I'll be gentle

Me: You already dressed

Him: I'll shower again

Me: Thobekgale

He parted my legs with his knee..

Him: I'm going to be quick

Me: I'm still brushing my teeth

Him: Rinse your mouth you will brush again

I rinsed my mouth..

He parted my legs and didn't completely remove my underwear he just moved it to the side exposing a portion of my cookie, he went his two fingers and then gently massaged my clit..

With my hormones being unstable pleasure slowly started to kick in..

.

.

OKUHLE

I woke up in Layla's ward, I had a sharp pain on my neck think I had slept in a compromising position..

I looked at her bed and it was empty, the duvet wasn't even made..

Me: Layla?

I got up and started looking for her..

Me: Layla?

I heard splashes of water and sounds from the bathroom, I opened and she was taking a bath with the Nurse monitoring her..

Layla: Khukhu look..

She had a rubber duck and a frog in the bathtub..

I looked at Nurse..

Her: We didn't wanna wake you

Me: She seems better this morning

Her: She is actually better

Me: That's good

I sat at the edge of the bathtub...

.

.

SHADOW

The warden took me down the passage to use the phone..

Me: Thank you

Him: Don't thank me... Thank your friends in high places..

Tpee has made sure that whatever I wanted I get..

Him: two phone calls no longer than 10min each

He moved a bit far away

I picked up the phone and made the first call, it was to Kresi. I haven't called her ever since I got locked up. I didn't know what to say to her, I hope she is not angry at me..

Her: Hello?

I choked.. I didn't know what to say..

Her: Hello?

Me: Hey it's me..

Her: Shadow?

Me: Yeah it's me

She didn't say anything for a while..

Me: I don't have much time

Her: Are you okay? Are they treating you okay?

I could hear that her voice was breaking..

Me: I'm fine... Are you okay?

Her: I'm fine.. I'm okay

Me: You don't sound okay.. Are you crying?

Her: No..

She broke down...

Me: What's wrong?

Her: Nothing is wrong.. I'm fine

She wasn't fine..

Me: I know that my being here hurt you and.. If you can come we will talk at least visitations are much longer

Her: Okay I'll come

Me: I love you

Her: I love you too

She hung up.. I made a phone call to Tpee, his phone led me straight to voicemail..

Me: Eyy Bro something is not right with my woman can you please check on her and get back to me? I'll be waiting

I then put the phone down..

65

THOBEKGALE

I listened to Shadow's voicemail that morning when I got to the office and it indicated that Kresi must've said something to him about what happened, I just don't know how much details he was given. The last thing I really need right now is being enemies with Shadow, Though he no longer is a part of the 28s but there's no telling what other gang he knows or tactics he has up his sleeve. I am supposed to be having enemies Snowy is pregnant and we just starting our lives, I want a shot at a perfect family and Snowy is going to give me that. As I was sitting in my office lost deep in my thoughts waiting for 11am so I can go to a meeting, Nissi came flying in. I didn't expect to see her I thought she was preparing her wedding..

Her: You Bastard!!

I looked at her..

Her: What you did to Kresi is cruel!

So now she told Nissi too?

Me: Stay out of matters that you don't understand

Her: I understand this matter very well because it's not new to me! When are you going to grow up Tshepi?

Me: Nissi you don't know what happened between me and Kresi

Her: I don't need to know all I know is that you have broken someone who gave you the best gift ever, you broke the Mother of your child.. How will Naledi feel about this? Do you know that what you doing will catch up with you one day? What someone treats Naledi the same way that you

treating Kresi?

I chuckled..

Me: Yeah I don't think that's going to happen

Her: I have taken a few pictures of her bruises.. I'm going straight to the police station

Me: You wouldn't dare!

Her: I would dare! Plus she needs medical intervention her bruises are bad

Me: Nissi go home and get married

Her: You are going to pay for this.. Either way, let's see how Naledi will feel knowing that her Father is a Monster, or Maybe Snowy will..

Me: Leave Snowy out of this!

Her: I regret the day that I ever met you

Me: I don't care but all I'm going to say is that stay in your lane!

Her: You might be rich and what not but you not above the law and woman abuse is taken very seriously

Me: Nissi you here talking all this nonsense but the truth of the matter is that Kresi is the one who is supposed to be reporting me and what not right now I don't think she will! I know Kresi she takes what's given to her so go get married and stay out of my business!!

She clicked her tongue and walked away..

.
.

OKUHLE

I did call Enzo and we met up for breakfast or should I say for "coffee". We bought coffee and chocolate muffins then went to sit at the park...

Him: Not something that you expected?

Me: It's okay I needed this fresh air

Him: How is your Niece doing?

Me: One moment she's okay the next moment she's grave sick.. I just hope soon she will be fine

Him: I hope so too

Me: How is your Grandmother?

Him: I'm fetching her later.. She's fine you know old age they want medical attention every now and then

I wasn't as nervous as I thought I would be around him..

Me: I don't do cat fights

Him: Why would you say that?

Me: Incase your girlfriend comes for my life

He laughed..

Him: I don't have a girlfriend

Me: What? Really? Are you gay?

Him: I'm not gay

Me: Wait I don't understand then why are you single?

Him: That's a story for another day.. Are you seeing anyone?

Me: No..

Him: What's your excuse?

Me: That's a story for another day

He sighed..

Him: I have to go.. Work

Our date was short..

Me: Well thank you for the short date

Him: I'm sorry

Me: It's okay

Him: Why don't you come by at the store and help out a bit, we will continue with the rest of our date there

Me: You don't seize to surprise me

He got up and took the muffins..
Him: Let's go
I got up too and then we walked to his car..

.
.

SNOWY

Vic had called me that he will meet here at the hospital, I don't even know where he got my number from..

Him: Snowy

Me: Mr Thobekgale

Him: How is the little one this morning?

Me: She's okay

Him: You would be relieved to know that I have found a good specialist.. By tomorrow we can have Layla transferred to another hospital and we will take it from there

Me: Thank you very much.. It really means a lot to me

Him: You welcome.. Why don't you come over at our house for Dinner tonight? I'll call Tshepi and inform him

Me: Okay

Him: If you need anything just call me

Me: I will and thank you

Him: Before I forget since you no longer working I think you should give me your banking details so you can get an allowance every month

Me: An allowance?

Him: Yes money to spend on things you need since you pregnant you shouldn't even think about going to work anymore until you give birth, you really have to focus on delivering a healthy baby

Me: Ohw.. Uhm..

His phone rang...

Him: We will talk about it over dinner tonight

Me: Yes Sir

Him: Take care

He walked away..

.
.

KRESI

I was still in great pain and I was also running out of pain killers. Nissi was very upset..

Nissi: If you don't report him Kresi there's nothing I can do

Me: I thought we already spoke about this

Her: Yes we did and that's why I'm leaving, I have a wedding to plan. No one can help you if you don't wanna help yourself so I'm sorry but I'm done here..

She took her bag and left..

66

OKUHLE

It hasn't even been a full day since I have been here and I already felt like I cannot go on, I respect everyone who works at a franchise. It's a job that's emotionally and physically challenging you get little time to even breath. I was helping around with things that didn't need hours of training, helping to fill up the shelves, doing admin work and other things. Enzo on the other hand he was full hands on, he handled a lot of departments all alone. I looked at him as he was busy talking with some guy, he really is a catch. I like his eyes more, they not big and they not small either they just hold too much intimidation. I can say that's where his greatest authority

lies..

After that lengthy talk with the gentleman they shook hands and then he made his way to me, I was in his cubicle were he had access to see what happens on the floor..

Him: Starring is rude

Me: Huh?

Him: I saw how you were starring at me, You were drooling and I mean that literally I still cannot keep eye contact with him, 5 seconds starring him in the eye is enough that I'll find myself looking at something else..

Me: You fool of yourself and I wasn't starring at you

He raised his one eyebrow..

Him: Really?

Me: Really..

Him: Are you hungry?

Me: Not that much but yes I am

Him: We can go and get something eat

A lot of his employees were just puzzled at my presence, judging from their looks they were wondering who I was and what relationship I have with Enzo. The tellers and the packers were the ones with full gossip on their lips since they working close to each other..

.
.

KRESI

Lying in bed and crying won't help I am not saying that what happened didn't break me but being in bed and constantly thinking about the terror of the whole situation, depressed me more. I was in pain, I was in serious pain and I can't even go to the Dr so they can see the extent of my bruises. I might have asked for this but he is the one who led me on, he kissed me and then picked me to his bedroom. He started the whole thing and now I am a witch? He gave me mixed feelings especially knowing very well that I was still trying to get over him. Yes he might have been doing this to save his relationship with Snowy but was it also like that when he was kissed me? When he laid me on his bed? He took off my clothes that's how close it was. He really confused me..

I flushed the toilet after peeing and wiped my tears, I fixed my towel and then went back to the main room. My eyes almost fell out from my socket when I saw him standing there in the middle of the room, I could feel my heart beating very fast as if like it was going to break. Fear crept in, I didn't even hear him coming in. Why is he here? Is he here to torture me any further? Does he actually have a heart, is he human? A lot of things ran though my mind..

Him: To answer your first question on how I got in, remember I used to live here. This is my house I still know the security code and to answer your second question I am not here to hurt you, well at least not today

He stepped closer and I stepped back..

Him: Kresi I didn't force myself on you let's get that straight, I didn't rape you and I don't like you going around telling your friends that I raped you! I didn't! I mainly gave you what you wanted!! He wasn't really shouting but his voice was intimidating..

Him: Wasn't why you did what you did? Planting your underwear for Snowy to find it, you thought that was going to get us back together didn't you?

I still remained quiet..

Him: Didn't you? (shouting)

I freaked out..

Him: What I did was what I would've done even if we got back together, you always made it easy for me to abuse you. You very weak!!

I swallowed..

Him: Tell shadow about this I'm going to kill you, Should Snowy find out about this I'm going to kill you, if Naledi finds out..

He let out a chuckle..

Him: You go to the cops I'm going to have you killed execution style and I'm not bluffing!
Tears started burning my eyes..

Him: A doctor is gonna come later on to examine you and give you anything that you need for the pain, and also make sure that there's no internal bleeding. After that you going to continue with your life, I don't care if you get through this or not but if you know what's good for you. You will never breath a word to anyone. Do you understand?

I nodded..

Him: Such things happen.. Most women go through this everyday and they surviving, some went through this and they survived you will survive too. In your case it's better because you not new to this, you were once a prostitute. If it wasn't for me you would be dead I saved you from that life and made you who you are today never forget that! You live in this house, drive a nice car and you have a successful business all because of me.. Be grateful or I can it all away

All I wanted was for him to leave already, deep inside I was done I was emotionally drained and I just wanted peace. I just wanted peace that's all..

.
.

SHADOW

Him: How much?

Me: R5 000

Him: Yizo!! Yizo Baba Yizo!!

He started whistling and doing some foot work, a few of the other guys joined him..

Him: Baie Dankie (Thank you very much)

Me: You welcome

Since I was sharing a cell with the 27s I had to prove to them that I wasn't an enemy, in so doing I introduced them into how they can sell drugs outside of the prison and make money. It's a long and complicated process but it has a lot of money and I learned that from the 28s..

Mageba is the leader or the general of the 27s, my loyalty to them will forever be tested..

We got out of the shower and made our way out to join others, I saw Budda standing at a far distance with his crew..

Mageba: You know that you not getting anything right?

He rolled a joint..

Me: It's cool

My eyes were focused on Budda as he whispered something to one of his crew, I don't trust him. As long as I'm going to be locked up in here I will never trust him...

.
.

SNOWY

I went to do a bit of shopping, I needed an outfit for tonight's dinner. Something was worrying me though, earlier on at the hospital when I went to pee I noticed a bit of spotting but I don't have cramps or anything. I checked on the internet and some website said that spotting is normal especially in the early stages of pregnancy. I hope that it's not something serious I cannot lose my baby while I have another one grave sick at the hospital..

67

SNOWY

There was a verity of foods starring at me. Rice was prepared in 4 ways, it was basmati rice, the one was mixed with vegetable, the other one was normal and the last one was mixed with chicken strips. I looked over at the meat and it was worse, there was soo much that I couldn't choose from..

Tshepi: Are you okay?

Me: There's just soo much and I am not familiar with some of what's prepared here

Him: Then stick to what you familiar with

Vic: Is everything alright my dear?

Me: Yes I'm fine.. Sorry just that I..

This was very overwhelming, when Vic said dinner I didn't think he was going to go all out. I got rice, chicken, and a couple of salads then I went and joined him and his young fiancé. The fiancé was way too young for him, her name is Siphokazi and it is not debatable that she is in it for the money. It was a mere dinner and she felt the need to dress up, she was wearing a Givenchy dress so she hinted and she was wearing Gucci flops. Apparently that's her stay at home outfit, according to her she wasn't "dressed up"

That stone on her finger was really big, it was even blinding me a little when she moved her hand..

I wasn't really shocked old men like Vic enjoy the pleasures of having a young wife..

My situation has changed a few hours ago I started feeling cramps and I still experienced spotting that I had on a pantyliner, I was whole heartedly convincing myself that it's normal. I read on the internet and they said it's normal, so I hope it is normal..

Vic: Out of all the women that my son has been involved with I can say you are my favourite

Me: Thank you

Him: I liked you from the very first time I laid my eyes on you

Tshepi came and sat next to me..

Tshepi: Don't let him say that because that's his way of saying can I spoil you
Everyone laughed..

Vic: It has to be done though.. I'm surprised you don't have a car
He looked at Tshepi as he raised his hands up..

Him: I tried but she doesn't want

Vic: It's a tradition for women in the Thobekgale family to have nice things, you don't have a car and Siphokazi has three

Siphokazi: Porsche Cayenne, Range rover evoque, and a Mercedes Benz - G wagon.. The Wagon is bullet proof

Vic: I think we need to get you one those a bullet proof car

Me: I.. I don't think I need one

Vic: Nonsense we have a lot of enemies and we can't take chances
This talk was too much and the cramps were starting to get to me..

Me: Can I please be excused? I have to make a phone call and check on my Daughter

Vic: Of course you can be excused

I took my phone and went upstairs, I needed a bit of fresh air from them..

.

.

OKUHLE

After the long day at the supermarket we went to see Layla I had to relieve Snowy since she went to have dinner with the Thobekgales..

We were standing in the corridor watching Layla through the window, she was in the play room with a few other kids. She seemed to be enjoying herself, I was worried about her operation tomorrow but the surgeon assured me that she will be fine, the operation will save her life..

Enzo: She seems happy

Me: She does.. She has no idea what awaits her tomorrow

Him: She is a strong kid, meningitis is very dangerous but she seems to be pulling through
My phone vibrated, it was Snowy..

Me: Sorry I have to take this

Me: Hey? Shouldn't you be enjoying yourself with your rich in law?

Her: It's a disaster!

Me: Huh?

Her: I don't belong here Okuhle

Me: Don't be insane

Her: Just everything... This is not me

Me: Babe enjoy your blessings you deserve this
I heard her breathing in and exhaling..
Her: I have been having this cramps and spotting
Me: Shouldn't you consult?
Her: I searched on the internet they said it's normal
Me: Snowy you can't trust everything that the internet says.. Remember you in your first trimester
you very vulnerable to a miscarriage
Her: Fine tomorrow morning I'll go and consult
Me: Thank you
I heard Layla calling..
Me: I have to go
Her: How is my cupcake doing?
Me: She's doing fine
Her: Greet her for me
Me: I will
Her: Okay I love you... Bye
Me: I love you too
I turned and looked at Layla..
Me: Hey
Her: I want a puppy
Me: You want a puppy? Why do you want a puppy?
Her: Because....
I looked at Enzo..
Me: Come I want you to meet a friend of mine
I held her hand and we went to Enzo..

.
.

KRESI

The Doctor only gave me pain killers, bathing salts and an ointment. Said I should use these for
at least two weeks, if there's no improvement then he will check for internal bleeding..

I was on the phone with Shadow, I was even surprised that they allowed him to be on the phone
for this long.

Me: I'll come and visit you soon

Him: I'll appreciate that

(Silence)

Me: Shadow I'm sorry

Him: Don't.. Let's just forget about it

Me: I was stupid, I was very stupid I shouldn't have..

Him: Don't do that to yourself.. It's water under the bridge I am just glad that you came to your
senses sooner than later but I love you and I didn't mind waiting for you

I heard someone ringing the bell..

Me: I have to go someone is at the door

Him: Okay I love you so much

Me: I love you too

The person rang the bell again and my heart skipped a bit, my mouth went dry. I had a lump on
my throat..

Naledi: Mommy it's me

I was able to breath again..

I went and opened, she had her bag with her..

I looked at the driver..

Me: Thank you

He slightly bowed and gave me the pad, I signed that she arrived home safe. It's Tshepi's orders
that we should always sign when the driver drops off Naledi.

Me: I thought we were meeting after the wedding?
Her: And I thought you were not around
Me: Ya I'm not feeling well.. I came back yesterday
Her: Well Dad is not around and I thought I should visit you.. Spend time with you
Me: I appreciate it
Her: Have you been crying?
Me: It's flu
She nodded..
Her: I'll go and put my bag in my room..
Me: Should I order pizza?
Her: Yes then we can watch all our favourite movies.. Do you have snacks?
Me: I think so
Her: Okay I'm coming
She ran upstairs..

.

SNOWY

I stood up from the toilet seat and my phone beeped, it was a WhatsApp message from Nissi. We exchanged numbers that time at the restaurant..
I opened the message and it was pictures, I downloaded them and the pictures were very disturbing. It was pictures of a woman with bruises all over her body, the last one revealed her face it was Kresi. She was laying on her bed, seemed like she was sleeping. I don't know why Nissi was sending me such disturbing pictures, and then she sent me a message saying "The monster that you with.. Look at what he did to her, he even sexually assaulted her"
I immediately let go of my phone and I don't know what happened but the cramps got extremely worse, I was even bleeding..

68

SNOWY

A MONTH LATER

Him: We will only be able to use you for 80 hours a month especially on Sundays, our Temps mostly work on weekends. Your fixed salary is going to be R1600 a month and R2000 if you put in extra hours, if you go beyond 80 hours
Me: I understand
Him: Everything is in the contract, your lunch break is 1hour
Me: Thank you
I took the pen and signed..
Him: You haven't even read the rest of the contract
Me: You dating my Sister so I trust you
That made him a bit uncomfortable..
Him: Guess I'll see you tomorrow morning for training
Me: I'll be here
Him: I believe we done here then
Me: Thank you very much you won't be sorry
Him: Glad I could help
Me: She is happy
Him: Sorry?
Me: Okuhle... You make her happy
He cleared his throat..
Him: Snowy you are my employee and I'm your employer, you need to understand that I won't give you any special treatment just because Okuhle and I are dating and my relationship is none of your concern and I would appreciate it if we don't talk about it here it would be very

unprofessional of me to discuss my personal life with my junior staff.. Do we understand each other?

Me: We do

Him: Then I'll see you tomorrow

I got up from the chair and took my bag together with the copy of my contract and headed straight to the door..

Me: She tells me about yall's sex life

Him: Dammit Snowy!!!

I laughed and walked out. Okuhle got me this job because things are now going to financially hard on me, I need a job to take care of Layla. Her operation was successful she has been recovering very well and next week she's starting preschool. My Father and Okuhle don't mine helping me but I don't wanna be a financial burden to them, I have always found it better being independent..

Unfortunately I miscarried, though I was 2 months pregnant I never thought that I would be that much connected to my baby. The miscarriage really hit me hard, I was depressed for two weeks and the Dr prescribed Antidepressants for me. Not only did losing my baby take a toll on me but also my break up with Thobekgale, Yes we are no longer together it has been a month now. A very tough month. When I showed him the pictures that time after being admitted he never denied, Nissi went on to tell me that he also raped her which made me more angry. As someone who has been through that ordeal I know how it feels like and I wouldn't wish it on any woman, not even if that woman is my worst enemy. I am not going to be with a man who is abusive like that, the pictures were very disturbing if Kresi survives all of that she will be emotionally scarred for life. He has a Daughter and I have a daughter, they should've been motivational enough for him never to treat women like that, what he did is not excusable. He has tried to contact me but I have been avoiding him when he showed up at my house I told him that I'll get a protection order against him. It was hard and it's still hard though from the start I knew that he was trouble but he showed me a side to him that I never thought existed. He was loving, over protective, treated me like a queen, loved my Daughter there's nothing that he wouldn't have done for me but then seeing Kresi's pictures all of that went away. I can never be with an abusive man..

.
.

TSHEPISO

I poured another glass and then gulped it down, I don't know how many glasses I have had so far. I looked at the bottle and it was half the empty, I probably don't have any left. This seems like the last of it, I need to get more..

The door opened and Gesh walked in, he looked around and whistled. He closed the door and made his way to me..

Him: Yerrr it doesn't smell good here

I took the bottle and went to sit on the couch..

He came and stood in front of the Tv without saying anything. A few seconds passed without me saying anything too..

Me: Snowy broke up with me a month ago, I tried calling her, I tried going to her house.. I tried everything but.. The last time I showed up at her doorstep she threatened to call the police, she threatened to get a protection order against me

I drank from the bottle..

Me: I have always been able to control the women in my life, they would all tremble at my feet, they worshipped me I enjoyed having control over them. It wouldn't be over until I said so, but Snowy..

I drank again..

Me: I never knew it would hurt this much

He put his hands in his pockets..

Me: Nissi did this knowing that I can't touch her, I can't touch Nissi without making enemies again with the bloods. She is married to Shane Cowen and her Brother in law is Braga, Vic would never

forgive me if I touch her and.. If something happens to her Snowy will know it's me and she will hate me more

I chuckled with tears filling up my eyes..

Me: Nissi really played her cards well this time around

I wiped my face with my hand..

(Silence)

Gesh: First of all you smell like shit!! This whole place smells like shit!! You drunk and if I can guess you have been drinking a lot.. Uyanyanyisa (You're disgusting)

Me: Gesh leave..

Him: I'm not going anywhere!!! Go take a shower and then we'll take it from there

I tried drinking again but he snatched the bottle from me, which hurt my front teeth a bit..

Me: Don't start

I got up..

Me: What are you going to do?

He put the bottle down..

I laughed while nodding..

Me: Okay.. Okay..

I tried punching him but he held my arm and then pinned it on my back with his other hand around my neck choking me...

Him: We can do this all day... Remember I am a blood and I am trained to kill

He let me go and threw me on the couch..

Me: You know what I'm going to do? I'm going to kill Snowy and then hand myself in.. I don't care what happens to me in jail as long as I know that no other man is going to have her.. Does she know who I am? Does she know how cold I can get? Can she go to the cemetery and ask my Exes.. Palesa, Charmaine,.. And

Gesh: Tsek I don't care who you are and I'm sure she doesn't too... If she did she would be here so go shower uyeke ukung'dina (Don't irritate me)

I got up from the couch..

Him: Go and shower Dawg, seriously don't test me

I threw myself on the couch again and closed my eyes...

Me: Just had my heart broken by this woman named Snowy, but hoes gonn' be hoes so I can't blame Snowy..

.
.

KRESI

For someone who was sentenced to 5 years he really looked good, thought prison was mostly brutal and cruel when it comes to males but Shadow really looked good..

Me: Stop it (Smiling)

Him: You look good

Me: Thank you

We talk on the phone a lot and I regret, I regret never appreciating him. What happened to me haunts me a lot, but group therapy helps and I have found something that I really like. Something that really helps me to get through each and every day. I have volunteered to help at some orphanage they take babies whose Mother's don't want them, especially babies born of rape. When I knock off I go and help around there. I have a connection with some baby girl her name is Masingita and I really wanna adopt her..

Shadow: I might get probation soon

Me: That would be nice

Him: You look happy

Me: I wanna talk to you about something

Him: What is it?

Me: I am thinking of adopting

His eyes widened..

Him: That's.. That's a big step
Me: I know but... I really wanna adopt
Him: I understand.. Can we do it when I'm out?
I nodded repeatedly with a smile on my face..
Me: Yes of course
He held my hand but the guard cleared his throat..
Him: I love you so much
Me: I love you too
Him: I can't wait to get out of here
Me: I can't wait too
(Silence)
Him: If something happened you would tell me right?
Me: Yes I would
Him: Time is almost up
Me: I'll come tomorrow again
Him: Thank you for coming
I smiled..

.
.

NISSI

He was busy throwing punches at the punching bag, I walked in and hugged him from behind.
He was breathing very heavily. He turned and hugged me too..
Me: Ewww you sweaty and disgusting
Him: Yeah whatever
He let go of me..
Him: Thought you were packing
Me: Yaa I was
Him: What's wrong?
I sighed..
Him: What have you done?
Me: I didn't do anything
He took off the gloves..
Me: Tpee might come after me
Him: Why?
Me: I..
Him: You what?
Me: He raped and beat his ex wife
Him: That's expected from him
Me: So I.. I took a few pictures and sent them to his girlfriend to show her what kind of monster
he is
Him: You did what?
Me: Kresi is weak I was standing up for her
Him: Why didn't she have him arrested
Me: We talking about Tpee here.. He might have threatened her
Him: So you played God?
Me: Really Shane?.. Tpee might be planning to kill him
He squeezed my cheek..
Him: He will never come after you
Me: You so confident
Him: To get to you he must get through me first and I don't think he wants an altercation with
me
Me: So?
Him: So what?

Me: What happens now?

Him: What happens now you go and pack we leaving tomorrow for our honeymoon and you live your life nothing is going to happen to you

Me: You sound so confident

Him: He is walking at the top of the heavens that I own.. So he wouldn't wanna piss me off because he will fall

He put over his shoulder and walked out with me while gently spanking my butt..

Him: We have a lot of packing to do

Me: Put me down or I will fall (Laughing)

69

SNOWY

My Dad was washing his car when I approached he had been babysitting Layla for me while I went to the interview..

Him: You are back

Me: Yes I am it didn't take that long

Him: How did it go?

Me: Ahh it went well but it's a temporary position, around 80 hours a month for a fixed salary of R1600

Him: That's little

Me: I know but what can we say.. It's a franchise

Him: You don't have to do this

Me: I want too.. I don't wanna be dependent on you and Okuhle plus I don't have any background education fit enough to get me a good job, this is what I have to settle for

Him: Something will come up.. Something better

Me: Good things don't happen to people like me, I have accepted

Him: Don't say such, have faith

Me: I am not a religious person

Him: Maybe you should pray once in a while

Me: What can God do for me that he failed to do when I needed him the most, back when I was a defenseless child and had a whole grown up man violate me

Him: Part of that is my fault

Me: Where is Layla?

Him: She's inside

Me: Thank you for babysitting her for me

Him: I will do it again if I have too

I walked in and made my way to the house, I found Layla watching cartoons as always..

Me: You not supposed to watch too much Tv

Her: But I'm bored

Me: I know baby but too much Tv is not good.. Do you want something to eat?

Her: No.. Yes

Me: Yes or No?

Her: Yes

Me: Bread or noodles?

Her: Noodles

Me: Okay let me make noodles for you

.

.

TSHEPISO

I didn't sleep that much maybe for an hour and then I woke up and took a long shower, I was still a bit drunk. I made my way to the living room and Carl was watching Tv..

Me: When did you get here?
He looked at his watch..
Him: an hour ago
Me: Where is Gesh?
Him: Family emergency
Me: I'm going out for a while
He got up from the couch..
Him: Where too?
Me: I want to see Braga
Him: Cool.. Let's go
Me: Alone
Him: Yeah right
I made my way to the door and he blocked me..
Me: Carl get out of my way
Him: I was given strict orders not to let you go
Me: Carl..
Him: Yeah?
Me: Get the fuck out of my way
Him: Naa that's not happening
Me: You don't know how to fight... I can give you one blow and you'll be out
Him: Tpee you can come at me physically but I'm not letting you go
Me: What the fuck is this?
Him: I am saving you from yourself.. If you kill Snowy you are going to jail
Me: Get the fuck out of my way.. I am telling you for the last time!!
(Silence)
Him: You know what go!!.. Go do whatever you wanna do we cannot be busy babysitting a grown ass man!
Me: Now you making sense
He moved away and I made my way out..

.

SNOWY

Layla: You don't do them nice
Me: Layla just eat
Her: But they are not nice Mommy
Layla likes complaining..
I heard a knock at the door..
Me: Better eat young lady
I went to open and Vic was standing there..
Me: Mr Thobekgale
Him: May I?
Me: Uhm.. Yes please
He made his way in and I closed the door..
Him: How are you?
I looked around..
Me: I'm good
People like Vic when they come to your place you don't know what to offer them, there's no drink that can suit his status..
Me: Would you like something to drink?
Him: unfortunately no.. I'm in a hurry
Me: Ohw
Him: Snowy my company is worth millions
Me: I know that Sir

Him: Though it has made me who I am and having money that can even maintain generations to come doesn't mean that every penny lost at that company is useless

Me: I don't understand..

Him: We have lost a major contract with a private hospital named Clinix all because the CEO hasn't shown up to work in a month

Now I understand where this was going..

Him: I have never seen my Son this broken, Tshepi has dated a few women even married one but out of all of them I have never seen him struggling this much with a break up

Me: Mr Thobekgale..

Him: Vic please

Me: I don't think I understand what you're trying to say

Him: Snowy he cannot go on without you.. He needs you

Me: He needs help

Him: You were making him a better person

Me: I am not a cure for a broken man

Him: Tshepi is a better person when he is with you, you bring out the best in him

Me: Is that why he raped and beat his Baby Mama? A woman who blessed him with a child.. Did he even think about Naledi when he was doing that? What if he killed her?

He keep quiet for a while..

Him: Think about it.. As much as he did a horrible act but he is not horrible. He loves you and we know he is the reason why your Daughter is still alive today, please don't crucify him just because of one bad act.. Greet your Daughter for me

He walked out...

.

.

KRESI

Naledi came back home from school looking a bit tired, she even came back a bit early..

Me: You home early

Her: Our coach is sick

Me: That's sad

She threw herself on the couch..

Me: We need to go to Dad's place and fetch some of my clothes

Me: We can just buy new clothes

Her: I like my old clothes I don't need new ones, some I designed myself

Me: I understand..

She took out her phone..

Me: I'm sorry for everything that's happening always having to be shifted from home to home

Her: You and Daddy weren't happy together even when you guys are no longer together you still not happy, if you not breaking he is also having problems. That's why I wanted to go to boarding school, I wanna be away from you guys

Me: Things will be different this time around.. I promise

Her: Did Dad hit you again?

Me: Huh?

Her: A few weeks ago I saw bruises all over your body when you were dressing up

Me: Naledi...

Her: He hit you again didn't he?

I didn't know what to say..

She got up and ran upstairs..

Me: Naledi.. Wait..

.

.

TSHEPISO

I was on my way to seeing Braga when my phone started ringing, it was Naledi...

Me: Poonkie Pie
Her: I hate you!!! (Crying)
Me: Excuse you?
Her: I hate you!! Stay away from us
Me: Naledi what is going on?
Her: You are a Monster!!! I hate you!! (Crying) don't ever touch my Mother!!! And don't ever talk to us!! We don't need you!! (Crying)
Me: Naledi listen.. Naledi? Naledi?
I threw my phone on the passenger's seat..
I was breathing heavily, I didn't need this on top of what has already happened. I felt the anger building up deep inside for Nissi, I felt like strangling her now.
My mind was far away that I didn't see I was running a red light, I was only aware of that when another car hit me on the side and I lost control of my car. It turned to be a serious car accident when other cars got involved too..

70

SNOWY

I washed the dishes after we all had finished eating dinner I was still very angry at what Vic said earlier on, how can he use money as a foundation of my relationship with Tshepi. Like I would run back to him because of money? I don't know why he thinks that but it made me very angry..

Layla: Mommy

I turned back and looked at her..

Her: When am I going back to school?

Me: I don't know Layla

Her: But I'm going to fail if I don't go back to school

Me: Layla you in preschool

She shrugged her shoulders..

Her: But still..

Me: Go ask Khukhu to bath you

Her: I can bath myself

Me: Layla stop.. You have a big mouth for a 5 year old

Okuhle walked in...

Kuhle: And then what's going on?

Layla: I want to go back to school

Kuhle: You will go back

Me: We will have to find her another preschool around here

Kuhle: Why?

Me: Can't afford the old one plus it's far

Kuhle: I will help and your Father will help too

My phone vibrated on the counter, Okuhle got it and passed it to me. I wiped my hands and checked the message, R10 000 had just been transferred into my account..

Me: Really?

Kuhle: What's wrong?

Me: Thobekgale

I passed her the phone..

Her: Wow..

Me: It's not wow..

I looked at Layla..

Me: Close your ears

She did..

Me: Thobekgale and his Father cannot act as if like they own me, I'm done with them I don't know why they can't just leave me alone!!!

Kuhle: Calm down

I took my phone from her and called Tpee, his phone rang until it took me to voicemail..

Me: Yazini I am not your property! You think depositing money into my account will eventually make me run back to you? You are out of your mind! LEAVE ME ALONE!!!! HLUKANA NAMI PHANTS!!! I AM NOT YOUR PROPERTY!!!

Kuhle: Yooh..

.

.

KRESI

I got a phone call from Vic letting me know that Tshepi had been involved in an accident and he was rushed to the hospital. He told me that it was a big accident and he is not sure if he's going to make it. I quickly rushed to Naledi's room..

Me: Naledi

She looked at me..

Me: Daddy had an accident, he is at the hospital come we have to go.. Grab your jacket

She quickly grabbed her jacket and then we left..

.

.

NISSI

I had just received a call from Vic told me that Tshepi was involved in a car accident. There was a time when those news would've made me happy..

Me: Tshepi had an accident

Shane: What happened?

Me: I don't know and I really don't care.. I'm happy that his sins are catching up with him! this are Kresi's tears. He deserves everything that's happening to him

.

.

KRESI

We arrived at the hospital and Vic was in the waiting area, he was with Siphokazi. Naledi ran to him..

Naledi: Where is he? Is he okay?

Vic: Doctors are still busy with him

Sipho: Come let's go and get everyone coffee

They both went, leaving me and Vic alone..

Me: How is he?

Vic: All of this is your fault

I looked at him..

Him: Your obsession with my Son is the reason why we here now

I cannot believe what I was hearing..

Me: Vic you don't even know what happened

Him: You planted your underwear at his place for Snowy to find it hoping that she finds it, what were you thinking that he will come back to you and you two live happily ever after?

Me: Despite what I did.. He had no right to do what he did

Him: If you going to play victim with me it's not going to work, you caused all of this! He was happy with someone else and you couldn't have that you just had to be otherwise

Me: I am here because of my Daughter.. I drove my Daughter here to see her Father. Trust me I don't wanna be here

Him: Then go!! We going to drive Naledi back home

I laughed...

Me: He got exactly what he deserved

Him: Count your words because if he doesn't make it I am going to make sure that you never live to see Naledi graduate

Naledi and Siphokazi got back..

Me: Baby look I have to go okay? Your Grandfather will drive you back home

Naledi: Okay

She hugged me..

Her: I love you

Me: I love you too

I then made my way to the exit..

.

.

SNOWY

The following day I woke up early and prepared myself for work, I had a big situation. I had no one to babysit Layla for me and I can't really take her to work with me. I don't know anyone around this neighborhood to babysit, plus I don't trust strangers around my daughter. I have seen a lot of disturbing videos regarding babysitters I don't want anyone mistreating my child..

I took my phone and called Enzo..

Him: Aren't you supposed to be on your way?

Me: Ya Enzo about that.. I'm sorry I don't think I can start anytime soon because I don't have anyone who can babysit for me.. And

He hung up.. Enzo is full of shit too..

I sighed and put my phone on the bed, it rang. I looked at the Caller ID I didn't know this number..

Me: Hello?

Voice: Don't hang up

It was Vic..

Him: Tshepi was involved in a car accident last night I don't know if you have seen on the news, it was a big accident

Me: What are.. What do..

Him: Snowy I don't think that he is going to make it, Doctors have been with him ever since. They not telling us anything and.. I need you to come, if he doesn't make it at least be by his side to say your Goodbyes

I let go of my phone and it fell, I felt extremely dizzy. The room started spinning and before I knew it I was on the floor..

71

SNOWY

I slowly opened my eyes to the sound of my Daughter crying, she even had hiccups now.

I have been so emotionally drained after I miscarried and also dealing with the break up took it's toll on me. My old life was a mess but it was less stressful than the one that I'm living right now, this one has been stressful ever since.

I calmed Layla down and then took my phone and called Okuhle..

Kuhle: Snowy?

Me: I need a favour from you

Her: Is everything okay?

Me: Thobekgale had a car accident his Father has no hope that Thobekgale will make it, I need you to take me to the Hospital

Her: I am at work

Me: I know.. Can't you ask for a few minutes? You just have to drive me

Her: Snowy my supervisor is strict and I'm already on the red line for being always late this is going to be suicide I can't have another warning

Clearly there was no hope in begging her so I hung up and called the number that Vic called me with..

Him: Hello?

Me: I wanna come but I don't have transport

Him: I'll send someone to come and fetch you

.

KRESI

I wiped my tears as the guards brought him in, he was wearing a jumpsuit but not all the way up. It's sleeves were tied up around his waist and on his upper body he was left with only his white vest. I quickly wiped my tears as he made his way to me..

Me: Hey

He sat down in front of me..

He didn't say anything, he just looked at me..

Him: What's wrong?

Lying to him wouldn't be a good idea, he knows me very well..

Me: Tpee is in Hospital

Him: You crying about that?

Me: No.. I wouldn't care whether he makes it or not, I took Naledi there and his Father had a lot to say to me

Him: Like?

Me: Blaming me for his son's accident

Him: Why would he blame you?

I kept quiet..

Him: Kresi?

Me: I.. There was a time I went to his place and things got out of control, we kissed and then he led me to his bedroom but nothing happened.. He stopped before things could go far

Him: That's all?

Me: I planted my underwear in his bedroom

Him: Why would you do that?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: But he found it an..

Him: Why would you plant your underwear in his bedroom? Why did you even allow for things to get that far?

Me: Please listen

Him: I'm not going to listen

He got up and started walking away..

Me: Shadow!

I got up too..

Me: He raped me and beat me

He stopped but still had his back facing me..

After a while he continued walking..

.

SNOWY

The driver came to pick us up, my heart started beating somehow when we walked in. I had hot flushes, my throat was dry and I felt my knees getting weak. They were sitting in the waiting area, Naledi and Layla lost it when they saw each other...

Me: Don't drop her

Naledi: She's not that heavy

I greeted Vic and Siphokazi..

Naledi: We going to get some snacks in the vending machine

Me: Okay

Vic: Thank you for coming

Me: How is he?

Vic: He had internal bleeding and a piece of metal went through straight to his lung and he also had cerebral hemorrhage

Me: That sounds serious

Vic: A neurosurgeon had to be brought in to stop the bleeding in his brain hence the surgery took long and he was even surprised that he was alive after the surgery, they also removed the piece of metal and now we waiting for the prognosis. He is quite strong didn't think he would make it but the next hours are very critical as he might collapse, more damage had been done to his brain

Me: Are we allowed to see him?

Him: not as yet but I can talk to the Dr so you can be allowed to go in

Me: I can't go in while you haven't went in

Him: I think he would want you to be there than me

I nodded and sat down...

Siphokazi: Can I get you something?

Me: Coffee would be nice

Her: I'll get you coffee

Me: Thank you

.
.

OKUHLE

Enzo: You have been starring at your

Me: I think Snowy really needs my help

Him: Snowy is old she can take care of herself

Well honestly today was my day off but I lied at home and said I am working just so I can spend a day with Enzo..

He kissed me on my thighs..

Him: We only have one day.. Tomorrow I'm going to work, and you going to work too so let's make this worthwhile

I put my phone away as he got ontop of me..

72

SNOWY

A FEW MONTHS LATER

I held his hand and looked at him.

Me: You soo stubborn, why don't you wanna wake up?

He was out of ICU, he could breath on his own but he just didn't wanna wake up. I don't know what was preventing him from waking up but since he sustained trauma in the most sensitive parts maybe that is why, he is still recovering. I have been by his side everyday except on Sundays, Vic is the one who is maintaining me and Layla financially. He even bought me a car to drive to the hospital everyday and also to drop off Layla at preschool, was nothing fancy it's a Toyota CH-R 2018 very convenient for traveling..

A knock disturbed me, I turned my head and it was Nissi standing at the door holding her handbag. She made her way in..

Her: Hi

I just looked at her..

Her: How is he?

Me: What are you doing here?

Her: Excuse me?

Me: What are you doing here?

Her: I am here to see how he is holding up

I laughed..

Me: You such a hypocrite!

Her: What did you just say?

Me: I don't know hey one moment you sending me pictures telling that he is a monster and then

the next you here, checking how he is holding up?

Her: Excuse me miss sunshine but he is still family, he is my step brother and as..

Me: Save that for a person who gives a fuck

She chuckled..

Her: Wow! Let me just leave before I..

Me: Before you what?

She didn't say anything she just walked away..

Me: Skank!

Her: What did you just say? You take that back!

I stood up..

Me: Or what?

Her: You don't know me just because you riding his dick doesn't make you someone, he can replace you when he wakes up. If he wakes up!

I folded my arms..

Me: Aren't you supposed to be enjoying life with your husband? You a newlywed aren't you? It's a Saturday morning you should be in bed with your husband having the best sex ever! Newlywed sex

Her: You know what Snowy go to hell!

Me: Can I have the directions seeing that you know the place better?

Her: Seeing that (Chuckle) Yazini I'm too gold for this nonsense!

She walked out..

Me: Thank you for gracing us with your presence your highness!

I clicked my tongue and then sat down again..

.

.

KRESI

Me: Layla you take the bag and Naledi will take the baby pram

Layla and Naledi are inseparable whatever issues Snowy and I had, we had to bury them for our kids sake. She's involved with my baby daddy and I'm involved with her baby daddy, there's going to be a lot of seeing and communicating with each other so we had to put our differences aside. We not best friends but we civil with each other and I wouldn't think of another person to be in Naledi's life than her, ever since she has been in Naledi's life Naledi's attitude has changed. She is more respectful and no longer acts like a brat. Things between me and Shadow are still rocky, I hope that he comes around because our family has extended. Today I brought home a baby girl, she is 3 months days old. Her Mother gave her up for adoption since she can't take care of her she is a drug addict and an alcoholic together with the baby's father. It wasn't an easy adoption a lot happened and the baby had health problems due to the fact that her Mother used to drink while pregnant, luckily the baby wasn't born with FAS (Fetal alcohol syndrome). Doctors say it's a miracle that the baby survived, she spent a lot of time in the hospital just so Doctors were very sure that she's okay..

I put her in the crib as she was sleeping..

Layla: She is small (Whispering)

Me: I know but soon she will grow up and be big like you

Layla: It's your Baby?

Me: Yes and your little Sister

Layla: And Naledi's sister?

Me: Yes

Layla: Maybe my Mom is going to bring home a little baby too

I laughed..

Me: Why do you say that?

Her: You brought a little baby home

Naledi: You talk a lot Layla

Layla: Ahhhhh

Me: Come let's go downstairs and leave the baby to rest

Layla: If the baby cries we not going to hear her

Naledi: Layla you talk a lot

Layla: I'm just saying

Naledi: But still you talk a lot

Layla: It doesn't matter

Naledi: Still..

Layla: It doesn't matter!

Me: Okay let's go.. Let's take this downstairs

I took the monitor and we all went downstairs..

.

.

OKUHLE

Enzo: It's going to have how many lines again if you pregnant?

Me: two

Him: Okay

(Silence)

Him: It's..

Me: Enzo please you stressing me more

We were in the bathroom he was sitting on the toilet seat and I was sitting ontop of him, I just did a pregnancy test and I hope it's negative. We have been very sexual active I don't know if it's new love that does that or what but everytime when we alone it's another story..

Him: And this is the moment of truth

We checked it, I was relieved to see one line..

Me: Next time we have to be more careful

Him: I am always careful

Me: Dude we in this situation because of you

Him: Because of me?

Me: You were driving me home and..

Him: You were distracting me

Me: How?

Him: Now you going to act innocent?

Me: How did I distract you?

Him: Okay if it's like that then you no longer getting none of me.. Get off me I wanna go out for a smoke

I got up..

Me: You are so sensitive

Him: I'm what?

He took his shower gel..

Him: Take that back or I am pouring this all over your face

Me: You wouldn't dare (laughing)

He opened it and cornered me..

Him: Take it back

Me: But you are sensitive

He opened it and poured it on my face..

Me: Enzo stop it! (laughing)

He put it away and kissed me..

.

.

SNOWY

After getting coffee I went back to his ward, I let go of the cup when I saw him awake with his eyes wondering around. I slowly made my to him, he looked disoriented a bit. I held his hand while shaking, I didn't know how to react and how to feel..

Me: Hey.. Can you hear me?
He looked at me..
Me: Don't say anything I'll go get the Dr
Him: W.. W..
Me: Wait you don't have to say anything
Him: Who.. Who are you?
I looked at him..
His eyes wondered around and then he closed them again..

73

SNOWY

They showed him a picture of a window, he looked at it for a while..
Him: It's a.. I've seen it before
Nurse: You seeing it now.. It's also here in your room
He looked at it without saying anything..
Dr: Let's move to the next
The Nurse showed him a picture of an apple..
Him: It's.. It's a picture of a fruit, a certain fruit
Nurse: That's good.. It is a fruit
I found this whole thing ridiculous!
Me: This is ridiculous!
I looked at him..
Me: Stop fronting this is serious!
Dr: Mam' Please
Me: I have been by your bedside everyday and now you telling me that you don't remember me?
There way he looked at me I could just see that he didn't recognize me and I felt a lump in my throat, tears threatened to escape my eyes...
Me: What am I going to tell Naledi and Layla? Stop fronting please!!
Dr: Please get her out
Nurse: Come let's go get fresh air
Me: You have to remember
We walked out of the ward...
Nurse: Calm down I know it hurts
Me: How is it possible?
The Dr walked out too and came to us..
Dr: Could you go and show him more pictures?
Nurse: Yes Doc
She went back in..
Dr: It is expected remember he sustained trauma to the head which caused brain hemorrhage, most people don't make it it's a miracle that he is alive
Me: It's no longer a miracle if he doesn't remember anything
Him: His thoughts are disoriented, we knew that the surgery would have minor consequences but we had to stop the bleeding. His brain is still trying to process everything his memories, they are all disoriented. His conscious and subconscious mind are both in battle into analyzing which memories belong were hence at some point he is going to have vivid memories whereas it would be delusions but it's all going to be up to him, only him he can gather his thoughts and memories back together
I walked up to the window and looked at him as the Nurse continued to show him pictures..

.
.

SHADOW

Mageba: Shadow my man
I looked at him as he looked around...
Him: We need more merchandise

(Silence)

Him: Shadow are you forgetting about the entertainment we going to have tonight? Strippers and prostitutes? When was the last time udla ikhekhe lowe sifazane (when was the last time you had sex with a woman)

Business has been going well and we have been making a lot of money..

Me: Unfortunately my contacts no longer have the merchandise or are not willing to sell to us

Him: What are you talking about that they not willing? Neh maan Shadow don't be like that I looked at him..

Him: Okay fine bro what do you want?

Me: I want to be out of here

Him: You will angisho you eligible for parole soon

Me: It's taking longer

Him: Entlek what's happening now? Why you wanna go out so bad?

Me: Things are getting messy outside while I'm here

Him: If you go how will I run the business?

Me: I will still tell my contacts to help.. You just make my parole happen sooner

Him: We have a deal

He extended his hand to me for a shake..

Me: Deal

.

.

SNOWY

I didn't stay for that long at the hospital, I couldn't stay for that long. I went to fetch the kids from Kresi's place..

Her: Hey

Me: Hey

Her: Are you okay?

I looked at the kids..

Her: Layla Mommy is here go get your things

Layla ran upstairs to get her things followed by Naledi..

Her: Something to drink?

Me: No thank you

Her: What happened?

Me: He woke up

Her: Isn't that supposed to be a good thing for you?

Me: He doesn't remember anything

Her: What?

Me: It's bad

Her: Some sort of amnesia? Is it something that's permanent?

Me: I really don't know Kresi

Her: Come sit down..I'll make you some tea to calm you down.. You don't have to take the kids you know

Me: It's okay I need the kids to keep me company I don't wanna be alone

Her: I understand

Me: How come you not angry? You talking about him as if like nothing happened, as if like he didn't hurt you?

Her: What he did still haunts me, it still gives me nightmares but one can choose not to dwell in such pain. Crying about it everyday won't change anything it will only destroy me, it won't change the fact that it happened. Now I am focusing on what brings me joy and peace the kids, my new family

Me: You are truly a strong woman

Her: Thank you and so are you

(silence)

Her: He loves you a lot trust me he will remember you actually he will remember everything soon that's Tpee he has cheated death a lot of times he is the devil in a flesh do you see the devil dying?

We both laughed..

.

.

TSHEPISO

Everytime I search deeper into my thoughts I come back with nothing but a lot of confusing thoughts. Everything was just scattered in my brain, I saw faces that I couldn't recognize. Things looked familiar but I didn't know what they were..

I looked at the Nurse..

Me: Is she gone?

Her: Who?

Me: The lady that was here.. Is she gone?

Her: Yes she's gone

Her: Do you remember her?

Me: No but.. When I looked at her I felt this warmth in my chest I think she meant a lot to me

Her: She is your girlfriend her name is Snowy

Me: I must've been one lucky person to have had such a beautiful girlfriend

Voice: You are a lucky bastard indeed!

I looked directly at where the voice was coming from and I saw this young girl. She was in her underwear and vest only, she was in a very disturbing state. She was covered in blood..

Me: Who are you?

Her wrists were zip cuffed..

Her: You no longer remember me?

Nurse: Mr Thobekgale are you okay?

Her: Let's go down memory lane shall?

She walked closer..

Her: Close your eyes and we will go down memory lane

74

TSHEPISO

I found myself in an all white room I don't know what I was doing here and I also don't know how I got here. I heard a female voice behind me, I turned around and it was her. She was no longer in that disturbing state anymore she was wearing a white dress and she was glowing she looked really beautiful. She made her way to me.

Her: You never pictured yourself here did you?

Me: What's happening? Who are you?

She held both my hands and suddenly a movie was played all around the room, only it was a movie that looked familiar. It was romantic moments between me and her, she seemed happy to be with me and it seemed like we had a good thing going...

Me: We had that?

Her: We did

Then suddenly everything changed, her body was laying in a bush. She was zipped cuffed, half naked and attacked...

Her: We had a good thing going until you did that

Me: I did that?

Her: Not literally you hired someone to do that

I let go of her hands..

Me: I don't think so

Her: I was madly inlove with you I was a naive varsity girl whose heart was stolen by the most ruthless person on earth. You were inlove with someone else then and you thought that having

me killed like that was going to get rid of me permanently and it did but it also hurt a lot of people, it hurt my Sisters

Me: I don't understand

Another voice arose..

Voice: You don't have too but it's true, I also suffered the same fate

She made her way to me..

Her: You initiated an accident that killed me

She looked at the wall and a picture appeared, it was gruesome. A whole car had crashed into her and cut her body in half from her abdomen area

Her: My name is Charmaine I dated you back when I was in varsity and at some point you didn't want me no more instead of letting me go you killed me

Me: This is not true

Charmaine: You were obsessed with Nissi so much that you didn't want your Exes to bring problems into your relationship with her

I looked at the other one..

Her: My name is Palesa and you robbed me of my life you could've just let us go, you fought for a girl that is with someone else now

Chairmane: All of this was for nothing

Palesa: You going to burn in hell!!!

They slowly stepped away I tried moving but my feet were frozen to the ground, then the ground I was standing on suddenly opened. I saw flames lingering..

Them: Burn in Hell!!!

I was sunk into the heart of the flames, I was burning and it wasn't a nice feeling..

Me: Help!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

In the pit of fire I heard voices..

Voice 1: Doc he is having a seizure

Voice 2: code green.. Code green.. Come on let's hurry!!

.

.

SNOWY

Naledi and Layla were very excited with the new house..

Layla: Mommy look.. It has a pool

I flashed a smile..

Vic: I bought it back when you were pregnant Tshepi wanted a bigger house since you guys were going to be a big family

Me: I understand

Him: I thought of selling it since everything became a mess but then I couldn't, it was my gift to you two and I want you guys to have it because I still believe that you will create good memories together in this house

Me: If only it was that easy

He put his hand on my shoulder..

Him: He is going to be okay Snowy I know him, he is very strong

I nodded..

His phone rang, he looked at it..

Him: It's the hospital I have to take this

He walked away..

I looked at Naledi and Layla playing around in the yard busy pushing each other..

Me: Naledi don't get too close to the pool if she falls in she's going to drown she doesn't know how to swim

Naledi pulled her away from the pool..

Vic: I have to go to the hospital

Me: Is everything okay?

Him: I told them to call me if something goes wrong and the Nurse just told me that he had a

seizure

Me: Should I come with?

Him: No it's okay I don't want us to scare the kids I'll call you

Me: Okay

He walked away..

.

.

OKUHLE

I was in the kitchen all nervous I was looking for a cup while I had it in my hand...

Enzo: Are you alright?

Me: She asked me to make her a cup of tea so that we can talk?

Him: So?

Me: Enzo your Grandmother is very intimidating what is she going to think of me? She found me walking around the house in your tshirt only

Him: She knows that I have a girlfriend she knows you spend some time here

Me: Old people are very strict culturally she is going to think that I'm loose

Him: You will be fine she's not a total nightmare

Me: Why are you all dressed up?

Him: I have to go to the store, there's an emergency there

Me: You leaving me here with her?

He kissed me...

Him: You will be fine.. I love you

He made his way to the door..

Me: Enzo..

He walked out..

Me: Dammit!!!

.

.

VIC

I arrived at the hospital and headed straight to his ward..

Me: What happened? How is he?

Nurse: He is stable now

Me: What happened?

Nurse: He was acting a bit funny and then he had a seizure

I looked at him..

Her: We sedated him

Me: How long is this going to take

Her: He is doing very well Sir he will be fine

Me: I hope so

My phone rang, it was Nissi I ignored..

.

.

OKUHLE

I took the cup of tea to her..

Her: Thank you

I attempted to walk away..

Her: Sit down

I walked back in and sat down..

Her: How are you?

Me: I am fine thank you

Her: Relax I don't bite

I tried to relax..

Her: Enzo wanted me to talk to you

I looked at her..

Her: Soon I have to go back to Mpumalanga and he is all alone here in his Father's house I think it's time he gets a woman who is going to be here full time help him look after this house and build a family with him

I swallowed..

Her: All I'm saying is that he feels strongly about you and he wants to pay Lobola for you as soon as possible

My jaw dropped..

75

OKUHLE

Later on that day when he knocked off he drove me home I was still in awe at what his Grandmother told me earlier on..

Him: You awfully quiet

He extended his hand to me..

Him: What's wrong?

I kept quiet for a while..

Me: Your Grandmother told me about the Lobola thing

He let go of my hand..

Him: We were just talking about it didn't think she would tell you

Me: Is it true?

Him: I am the only child born to my parents when they died I was left alone can't really say much about my step mother. Relatives are not always there, my Grandmother lives in Mpumalanga she has a house there and she is raising my cousin's children so she can't move in with me permanently. I am not saying I'm looking for someone to kill boredom with but I am at the age were I should be starting my own family, I want to settle down and I know that we been together that long but I love you and I wanna spend the remaining years of my life with you only if you feel the same way too

I love Enzo and I am grateful that despite my past and everything that has happened God was able to bless me with such a loving man, he is in my life for a reason and he makes me very happy. I think that this how God wants it, this is my destiny

I held his hand..

Me: Okay let's do it.. Let's get married

Him: Are you serious?

Me: I know that we haven't been together for too long but I love you and you love me.. We will make it work

He smiled..

Him: I love you soo much

Me: I love you too

He kissed my hand..

.

.

TSHEPISO

She took the spoon and brought it closer to my mouth..

Me: What are you doing?

Her: You have to eat

Me: I am not crippled I can feed myself!

She put the spoon down and I clicked my tongue..

Her: Then I will leave you.. I'll come back when you done so you can drink your medication

She walked away..

I took the spoon and my hand was trembling very bad, I tried to bring it closer to my mouth but all the contents fell. I threw it back on the plate..

Me: Fuck!!!!

Voice: You seem to be back to your old self that's good.. That means your memory will be back soon too

It was my Father, he made his way in. It's funny how I'm finding it difficult to remember certain people and things but my memory of my Father hasn't been completely wiped off..

Me: When am I getting out of here?

Him: It all depends on the Dr

Me: I feel fine

Him: Tshepi..

Me: I feel fine! How am I supposed to remember my life when I am stuck in here????

Him: Calm down! I know you frustrated but everything that's been done here is for your well-being you just survived a terrible accident we need to make sure that everything is okay! What is wrong with you?

Me: I just wanna get out of here!!

Him: And you will

(Silence)

Him: It's good that your stubbornness, your arrogance, and your difficult personality is back but take it easy

I remained quiet..

Him: Snowy is very worried about you, she's breaking and she needs you she can't take care of the kids alone at least try to be cooperative for her

Me: Why is she with me?

Him: Pardon?

I remembered the dream..

Me: Clearly I'm not a good person and she seems like a nice decent girl who deserve a much better man why is she with me?

Him: You need to ask her that.. All I know is that she loves you and she loves you with all your flaws when you get out of here you have to grow up! You cannot keep on messing up like this, you have a family now. Your focus should be on Snowy and the kids, and not your exes

.

.

SNOWY

I knocked at the door of her bedroom, she was laying in bed and concentrating on her phone..

Me: Hey

Her: Hey

I walked in..

Me: We haven't had much time to talk

Her: Yeah I know everything has been a mess lately

I nodded..

Me: How are you?

Her: I'm good

Me: Tomorrow morning I'll take you and Layla to go and see your Dad

She kept quiet..

Me: Naledi he has...

Her: Lost his memory

Me: He might not remember you

She remained quiet again..

Me: I know that you angry, I was too when I found out that he hurt your Mom but your Father loves you and I think that you should fix things with him

Her: I don't like the person that he is sometimes

Me: I know.. I don't like the person that he is too at times

Her: Has he ever hit you too?

That was a difficult question to answer, she got out of bed..

Me: Naledi..

Her: I hate him!!!

Me: You don't mean that

Her: I do!!! I hate him a lot!!

She walked out. I understand how she feels being disappointed by someone that you love..

.

OKUHLE

Sam: At least one person is back.. It gets boring around the house

Me: I can imagine

Him: I cooked..

Me: You cooked?

Him: What's wrong with a man cooking?

Me: Nothing.. Nothing is wrong

Him: it's nothing fancy so don't get excited

He started dishing up..

Me: Sam can I talk to you?

Him: I'm all ears

Me: My..

I cleared my throat..

Me: My boyfriend wants to pay Lobola for me

Him: So quick? Are you pregnant?

Me: No I am not pregnant

Him: He has to come and talk to me.. You and Snowy I don't understand what's going on, let's go and eat

Me: I want the negotiations to be done at my Grandmother's house were I grew up

He looked at me..

Me: My Father is no longer going to be around it's only fair that they done there

Him: Then unfortunately I won't be a part of the negotiations

Me: Come on

Him: There's bad blood between me and your Grandmother

I sighed..

Him: Have you spoken to Snowy about this?

Me: No I don't know how she will feel

Him: You should talk to her

76

OKUHLE

ONE MONTH LATER

Lobola negotiations were on Saturday and they were a success despite the issues that arose in this house a few years ago but Snowy did come, I was happy that she came to support me. My Grandmother even humbled herself to apologize to us for never believing us about my Father, I never thought that my Grandmother would go as far as apologizing.

Her: I am so sad that you leaving

Me: Tomorrow I have to go to work

Her: I understand

Me: Thank you for making the negotiations a success for her

Her: It's your happiness I couldn't stand in between you and your happiness

Me: Thank you very much

Her: I was also glad to see Snowy and Layla

Me: It's good that you two talked

Her: She's far from forgiving me I think she was just being civil with me for your sake

Me: Give her time.. It's not easy for her

Her: I understand I failed her I am the reason she grew up in the streets

Me: Look on the bright side those were blessings in disguise, if things didn't happen the way that they happened then she wouldn't be were she is Today

Her: You two have achieved soo much.. Look at you being someone's wife our little Okuhle is now a woman

I laughed..

Me: It does feel somehow.. I'm used to it

Her: You'll get used to it

I took my bag..

Me: Let me go put this in the car

Her: Do you want the money?

Me: Money?

Her: Your Lobola money it's yours

Me: Don't be like that.. It's yours you deserve it

Her: Okuhle..

Me: Grams you deserve it.. Despite everything that has happened you raised me in this house this was my home

Her: You have always had a good heart that's why God decided to bless you like this, I wish you nothing but happiness

Me: Thank you

Her: Let me walk you outside to your car

We both walked outside..

.

.

KRESI

Shadow called me about a week ago and told me that he was out on parole. It doesn't make sense his parole was supposed to be somewhere next year or so, I wonder what strings he pulled to be out.. The door bell rang, I put the bottle down on the counter and went to open. I put my hand on the door handle and took a deep breath then I opened, There he was standing at the my door step..

Him: Hey

Me: Hi

Him: May I?

Me: Yes you may

He walked in and I closed the door..

When I turned around he pulled me closer to him and kissed me, I didn't know how to react. He let go of me...

Him: I'm sorry I...

Me: It's okay.. It's okay

Him: How have you been?

Me: I've been good and you?

Him: I've been well

Me: It's good to see you out

Him: It's good to be out

The baby started crying...

Me: Excuse me I'll be back

I took the bottle and went to the lounge, he followed me..

I picked her up from the couch..

Him: A baby?

Me: Remember I told you that I wanted to adopt?

Him: And you did

Me: I did

Him: Can I hold her?

Me: Yes

He took her...

Me: Maybe give her the bottle I think she is thirsty

Him: You think?

He sat down..

Him: What's her name?

Me: Andrea

I handed him the bottle..

Him: She is adorable

Me: She is very adorable

Things were a bit off between us maybe with time things will be better..

.

.

SNOWY

Tshepi was coming back home today and I was very nervous, I haven't seen him in a while since he lost his memory. It was an emotional struggle for me to be there while he didn't remember me at all. Vic didn't tell us much, he just told us that he has been doing well physically that the Dr decided to release him and said he will recover at home..

I heard the car pulling up in the driveway I was standing at the kitchen not knowing what awaited me on the other side..

I waited for them with my whole body trembling, I was very scared I won't lie..

After a minute or so the door opened, Vic walked in first and then he made his way in after Vic..

He was wearing a hat and I didn't see his dreadlocks dangling, think he had them cut because of the surgery he had..

He looked better I mean he was walking on his own and everything, He looked soo much better.

Vic: Morning

Me: Morning

Tshepi: Thank you for driving me

Vic: No problem.. I should get going I'll call you

Tshepi: Okay

Vic: Bye Snowy

Me: Bye

He made his way out..

Silence engulfed the room we didn't know how to react to each other..

Me: You look well

Him: Thank you

He looked around..

Me: Vic went ahead and bought the house despite everything that happened

He nodded while still looking around, he then looked at me..

Him: I remember very well that he bought the house for me and my girlfriend but I don't know if I can still keep the house because if I remember very well she dumped me before I had the accident and..

Hearing that I went over to him and hugged him..

Me: Your memory is back

Him: Think I wasn't ever going to remember you?

We broke the hug..

Him: Thank you.. Vic told me that you were by my side at the hospital I appreciate that

Me: You were in a very bad state.. I didn't think that..

Him: I'm fine.. I'm not completely fine but I'll live

I chuckled..

Me: I can see that

He wiped my tears..

Him: I love you so much
Me: I love you too
He leaned over and kissed me..

.

VIC

On my way home I called Nissi..

Her: Vic Hi.. I have been trying to get hold of you

Me: I have been busy

Her: Busy not to even return my calls?

Me: I had to run the company since Tshepi was in hospital

Her: How I he?

Me: He is good his memory is coming back he has 80% of it

Her: That's good

Me: Listen Nissi... Please stay away from him

Her: I have no intentions of contacting him

Me: Good because if he comes for your life I will not protect you as much as I love you but you almost robbed me of my only Son

Her: I didn't do anything

Me: You initiated everything.. What happened was between Him and Kresi not you, you had no right to get in between

Her: I was protecting a friend

Me: Either way you went about it the wrong way

She exhaled..

Me: Just stay away from him do we understand?

Her: Yes

Me: Bye

Her: Bye

77

SNOWY

I was grateful that he is back it's only now I ask myself what would I have done if I lost him I think I wasn't going to survive that. Layla is going to be happy to see him I am not sure about Naledi though, she has been mad at him but I hope she comes around..

I was preparing a home cooked meal for him, though it was a private hospital but I'm sure that the food wasn't that good. I didn't even see him coming down just felt his hands around my waist, he kissed me on my neck..

Me: I thought you were sleeping

Him: That's what I was doing everyday at the hospital

He moved and stood next to me..

I noticed that he was in his sweat pants, he was shirtless and had a hat on..

Me: What's with the hat?

Him: I had to cut my locks because of the stitches it's very uncomfortable for me to be bald, I had locks for a very long time

Me: Let me see

He took off his hat..

Me: You look good..

Him: Can't wait for the stitches to be taken off so they can use a laser to make the stitch appear small and faint

Me: Isn't that dangerous?

Him: No

He kissed me on my cheek..

Him: What are you cooking?

Me: Just preparing a warm dinner for all of us

Him: How did the kids take it?

Me: Well Layla will be happy that you back but Naledi..

Him: I know she's going to be stubborn and difficult about this

Me: I wonder were she gets that from

(Silence)

Me: I know that you are not crazy and I know that you wouldn't do that to Kresi without a reason..

What happened?

He kept quiet..

Me: My being here doesn't mean I support what you did, as a person who has been sexually violated for a long time what you did also set me back. The man that I love dearly is hurting other women the same way that my step father..

Him: You not going to compare to him.. What happened between me and Kresi is.. Let's just not talk about it because the reason behind what happened is going to hurt you and I don't think I can have you walk out of my life again

Me: Did you sleep with her?

Him: No I didn't sleep with her

He exhaled...

Him: I really don't wanna talk about this, I don't want us to ever talk about this okay?

I nodded..

Him: I just wanna start over.. I have been given a second chance in life and I wanna use it wisely

Me: She is doing fine she is trying to put what happened behind her, I think it will best if you stay away from her

Him: I will.. I promise

Me: I'm almost done.. I'll go and fetch Layla

Him: Let me go and take a shower then make a few calls

He kissed me while grabbing my butt..

Him: And we have a lot of catching up to do later

Me: Just go and shower (smiling)

He made his way upstairs..

.
.

SHADOW

I sent Tpee a text that we must meet later on.

I was in a secret location waiting for Makoya to come, he is an old friend and a 28 we actually became close buddies because of the crew. He is the one who has been helping me with the drugs and since I promise Mageba that I'll still help him with the drug business since he helped me out with my Parole I have to keep to the end of my deal..

He parked his Citi gold right next to my car, then he got out..

Me: Thank you for coming

He kept quiet..

Me: Do you have the drugs?

Him: No

Me: I don't understand

Him: When were you going to tell me that you no longer a part of us? No when were you going to tell me that you betrayed the general?

Me: It's a long story

Him: I should be killing you right now

Me: Trust me you don't wanna do that

(Silence)

Me: Makoya I was trying to protect my Daughter, as long as the general was out my Daughter was always going to be in danger. You have kids you know this, you know that as a Father you

have to protect your kids at all costs

He ran his hand across his face..

Me: We have been friends for a long time, you know I wouldn't do this if there wasn't a reason

He kept quiet for a while..

Him: I'll get the staff

Me: Thank you

He walked back to his car and I followed him..

Him: The 28s must never know about this or else I'm dead

Me: They won't

Him: For your own safety I think you shouldn't start any problems with them

Me: I won't.. Trust me

He handed me the drugs..

.

.

OKUHLE

Enzo: Welcome home

He took my bag inside, I already have most of my things here..

Me: Thank you

We walked to the bedroom..

Me: I missed you

Him: Missed you too

Me: I didn't think we were going to make the Lobola negotiations a success

Him: What's meant to be is meant to be

This feels like a dream come true, in my whole life I have wished for something different. I had wished for a good career and a peaceful life, this is a bonus..

Him: You must be tired I'll cook.. It was a long drive

I laughed..

Me: You will cook?

Him: Yes I'll cook

Me: Can't wait

Him: You think I can't cook?

Me: I didn't say anything

Him: I'll show you

Me: I seriously cannot wait

Him: I'll leave you to sort out your things.. I'm going out for a smoke and then I'll come back and prepare dinner

Me: Okay

He walked out of the bedroom..

.

.

TSHEPISO

Snowy sent me a text saying that they will come back at around 19:00, she went to see her Grandmother. Another interesting text that I got was from Shadow he wanted us to meet up didn't know he was out and I know that he wants us to meet because of Kresi. I heard the kitchen door closing I looked at the time and it was 17:00, she's a bit late. I was in the lounge watching soccer, she was a bit shocked to see me judging from her facial expression she walked upstairs without saying anything to me. I followed her to her bedroom..

Me: It's late

She kept quiet. Naledi can be very difficult..

Me: Can we talk?

She still didn't say anything..

Me: I'm sorry for everything and I am sorry for hurting your Mom. I know you hate me right now but I hope that some day we will put this behind us and start over. I have been given a second

chance in life and I wanna make everything right... I love you, you mean everything to me I hope that you will forgive me one day. I'm truly sorry if I could go back and change everything I would just for you, I might not be the best person but I try to be the best Father and I'm sorry that I have disappointed you I hope we will put this behind us some day.

I saw tears in her eyes..

Me: Come here

She didn't want..

Me: Stop fighting me and come here

She made her way to me and I hugged her..

Me: I'm sorry...

I let her cry it all out..

.

.

SNOWY

My Grandmother and I are trying to work things out with everything that's happened she is still family and the only family I have from my Mother's side. Though she is the reason why my life became difficult from not believing me and thinking that I put Budda behind bars for nothing, but if things didn't work how they worked out I don't think my life could've changed and became this better. I wouldn't have Layla in my life right now and I wouldn't have met Thobekgale..

Her: Layla has grown up

Me: She has, and she talks alot

Her: She is still a loud mouth

Me: You have no idea

Her: Kuhle left too I'm actually glad you stopped by

Me: Her negotiations went well

Her: They actually did.. I still can't believe our Little Khukhu is someone's wife

I chuckled..

Her: And when are we having your negotiations? Me: I don't think anytime soon

Her: Come on Snowy you still scared of being tied down

Me: I don't know only time will tell

Her: Know that I'm very proud of you.. You are a very strong person

Me: Thank you

Her: And I'm sorry for everything

Me: It's okay.. We can finally put everything behind us

She nodded..

Me: Just wish Mom was here

She exhaled..

Her: I killed my Daughter.. How could I have been soo blind?

Me: Budda made himself look perfect

Her: He fooled me

Me: But not all is lost you still have us

She held my hand..

Her: And I'm grateful for that

We were sitting outside watching Layla playing with the sand..

.

.

SHADOW

Tpee sent me the directions to his house, he told me to come over. He wanted us to meet there, I wasted not time and made my way there..

The door was opened by Naledi..

Her: Hey Shadow

Me: Hey.. Is your Dad home?

Her: Yes come in

I made my way in..
Her: I thought you were in jail
Me: Out on parole
Her: Ohw is everything alright? Is Mom alright?
Me: Your Mom is fine.. Just here to talk to your Dad
Her: I'll get him
This house was very beautiful, The Thobekgale's are stinking rich..
After a few minutes he made his way in..
Him: Eyy
Me: Hey
Him: Whiskey?
Me: Why not
We made our way to the lounge..
Him: Could've met you somewhere else I'm not eligible to drive as yet
Me: It's cool
He handed me the glass of whiskey..
Me: Thank you.. Your house is beautiful
Him: Thank you
Me: I think you know why I'm here
Him: I think I do
Me: She told me everything
Him: I guess she did
Me: Despite what she did you had no right to do that.. I even feel like fucking you up right now
Him: I understand your anger
Me: I am not going to start any war with you.. It's going to be a very big war between us that will hurt those we love
Him: That is very true
Me: So here's the thing.. I want you to stay away from her, don't call her, don't show up at her house or even at work. Naledi is old enough to contact her Mother on her own, If you by any chance contact Kresi I will come after you and that is a promise
Him: From here on I will stay away from here
He extended his hand to me..
Him: We can shake on it
I extended mine to his..
Me: I hope you do stand on your word Tpee I am doing this for my Daughter and for Snowy they seem happy with you and the last thing I want is to hurt them like that, Snowy hates me already I don't want her hating me even more
Him: You have my word.. I will stay away from Kresi
We shook on the truce..

78

FINALE

2 YEARS LATER

SNOWY

I heard Karabo crying..

Me: Layla what are you doing?

Layla: I didn't do anything I just looked at him

Me: Don't look at him

Layla: Ahhh

Me: Where is Naledi?

I went and picked Karabo up..

Me: Go get Naledi upstairs tell her she's been forever getting ready

Naledi made her way downstairs..

Me: Finally!!

Naledi: What's wrong?

Me: Layla has been waiting and she's irritating the twins

Yes a while back I gave birth to twins, two bouncing and healthy baby boys following my miscarriages. After a while of Tshepi recovering we tried having another baby but unfortunately it was another miscarriage and I just gave up because I really thought that I was cursed, it set me back took me to the day when I had my first miscarriage. I didn't wanna try again I just gave up but in the mist of my depression and pain I fell pregnant again it was not planned and when I found out I was so sure that I was going to have another miscarriage, but I didn't. I don't know how it even happened for me to be pregnant with identical twins but all I know is that both of them came to my life when I was at my lowest. I named one Karabo, I am not a religious person but when I found out that I was pregnant again I prayed everyday and Karabo was born first so he became the answer to my prayers, God made him an answer to my prayers. I named the other one Kagiso, he became my peace after the two miscarriages he came and became my inner peace, the peace I desperately wanted. Their Grandmother's genes became dominant, it's like deep in her grave she wanted the twins to continue the Indian bloodline. They are my everything though I wanted girls but I love my boys just as much. Life has been very peaceful, after the incident with Kresi Thobekgale changed his ways he really did stay away from her. Kresi and I have a relationship because of our kids, we not really enemies just because we dating each other's Exes. Layla is now 7 years old, she is doing grade two and she is still a loud mouth. Naledi is 18, she's doing grade 12 and we very proud of her. Her relationship with her Father is stronger than how it was before, I am glad that they put everything that happened in the past..

Me: I will call your Mom and let her know that you guys are on your way and drive safely

I decided to let Shadow have a relationship with Layla, right now they going over to Kresi's place she's having a bit of a get together lunch but I am not going only the kids are going..

Me: Layla come and give me a kiss

She came and gave me a kiss..

Me: I love you

Her: I love you too

Me: Behave okay?

Her: I will

Me: See you guys on Monday

Naledi: Bye

I put Karabo down, they not that much troublesome they just eat and sleep a lot..

Today I was alone until Tshepi knocks off, the nanny is off on weekends..

.

.

KRESI

Me: Andy don't touch that

Andrea is soo naughty that I can't even keep up with her anymore, she's always running around the house and breaking things. She's very naughty..

A while ago Shadow did the most extraordinary thing, he got a hold of my family after years of no communication and today they coming over for lunch. Unfortunately my parents are no more so it's just my siblings coming over..

Tshepi and I haven't been in communication for about 2 years or so, I am very comfortable with that and Naledi is old now that we don't need to be calling each other about her. If I want him to do something for her I call Snowy and she tells him, that's how we keep the communication. I wanted to adopt another baby this year but Shadow thought that we should get a surrogate, I am all for that and we have put in our application at the clinic they looking for one and we are prepared to pay her R150 000 and also cover her medical expenses and everything else for that

time being that she would be carrying our baby..

.
.

OKUHLE

My Grandmother had temporarily moved in at our place just until I give birth, I call this a baby fever year because Snowy gave birth a few months ago and I'm 8 months pregnant. A baby was the last thing on my mind I wanted to go back to school this year but Enzo wanted a baby before I could go back to school, in his own crazy mind he thought that if I go to school first and get my degree I would concentrate much on my career than giving him babies..

Grams: Agh shame you look tired

Me: I am tired I can't wait to give birth already.. I look like an elephant

Grams: You don't look like an elephant

I sat down on the couch..

Grams: I'll make you something to eat

Me: Thank you

I don't know what the future holds for me and Enzo but I am happy, I am very happy with my life right now and he has been nothing but supportive and loving. I thank God for him everyday...

.
.

SHADOW

Being a drug lord was something I didn't expect to do but after seeing the profit that I was making I wanted more and more..

He gave me the envelope, I opened it and looked at it...

Him: They slit his throat.. He is gone

I looked at the picture of Buddha's dead body laying in the shower. I had to have him taken out because he was starting to become a problem to me, This is my message to the 28s that I will come after them should they start any war with me. Having Buddha killed, I did a lot of people a favour..

.
.

TSHEPISO

Me: Do you see KG's chair is not moving?

Snowy: I think it's broken.. I noticed yesterday

Me: We have to get a new one, I'll check

Her: Thank you

We were on a video call..

Me: What are you guys doing?

Her: The usual.. Formula, changing nappies, them vomiting on my shoulder after I have fed them I started laughing..

Her: Don't laugh it's really a full time job

Me: As soon as I'm done here I'll come home

Her: I can't wait... I am tired and I wanna sleep

Me: Okay I'll see you then

Her: Okay

Me: I love you

Her: I love you too

When we found out that she was pregnant with twins, it took me a week to believe it especially after she has had two miscarriages. This is what I have always wanted, a big family and seeing that Naledi is going to varsity next year at least I'll still have Layla and the boys with me. I am now committed to being a good Father and a good life time partner to Snowy..

I AM TSHEPISO THOBEKGALE AND THIS IS MY ENDING...

*****THE END*****

After all the pain and tears came a ray of sunshine 🌞.

Goodbye Tpee we wish you many more and hope you have grown up ❤️.